



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Jst. Child.

Entered 1919.15.435

Noel. Armfield

HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY

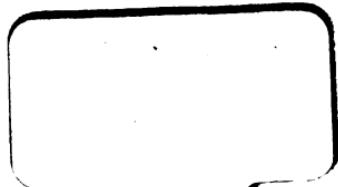


FROM THE LIBRARY OF
JOHN ALLAN CHILD
Class of 1900



The Gift of his Sister

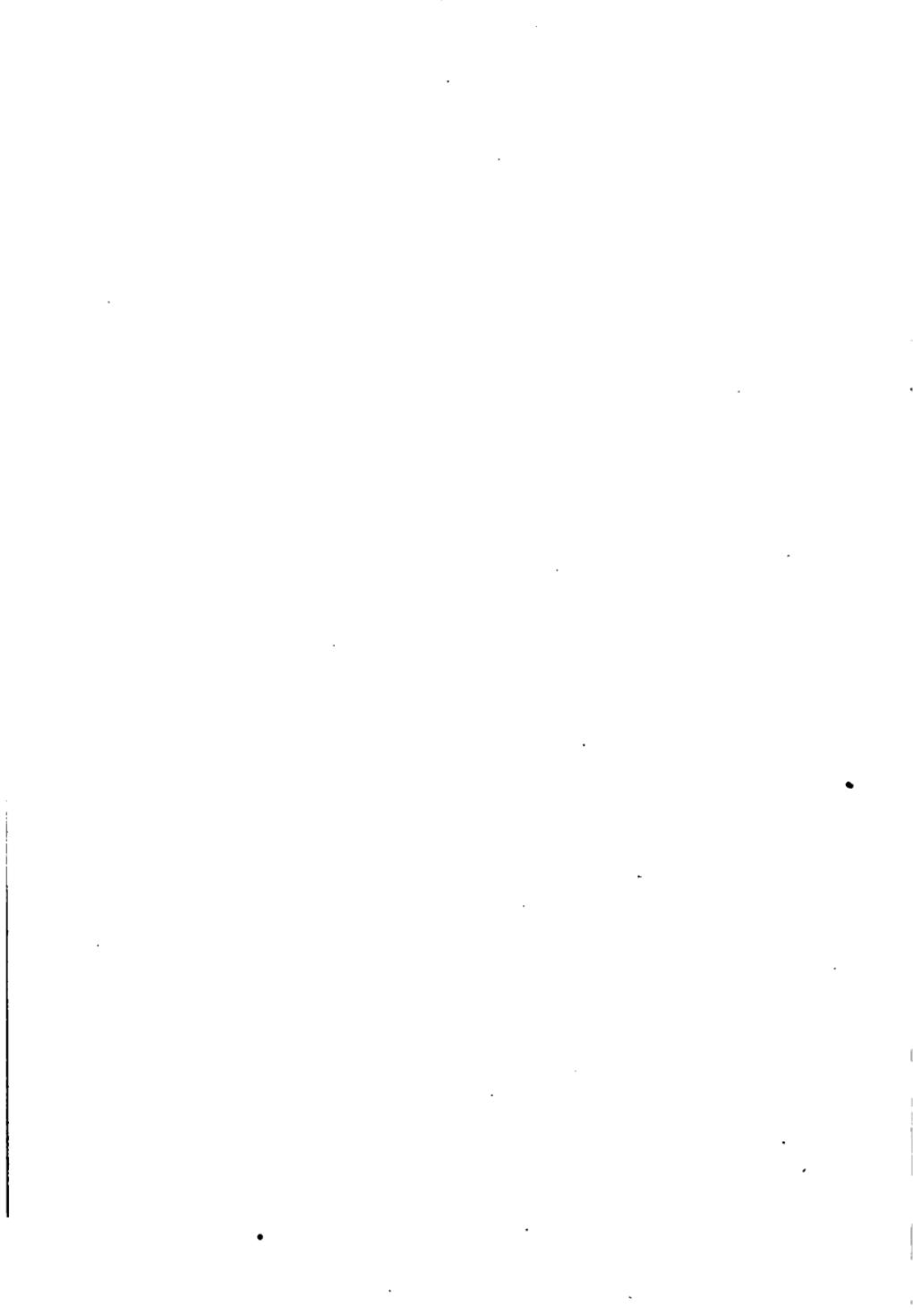
MRS. HAROLD RICE
of Arlington, Massachusetts





3 2044 102 869 013





Heath's Modern Language Series

ITALIAN GRAMMAR

BY

C. H. GRANDGENT

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY

***REVISED BY THE AUTHOR AND PROVIDED WITH
NEW EXERCISES AND VOCABULARIES***

BY

E. H. WILKINS

**PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN
THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO**

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS
BOSTON NEW YORK CHICAGO

Eduo T 1919.15.425

v



From the Library
of John C. H. Child

COPYRIGHT, 1887 AND 1904
By C. H. GRANDGENT

COPYRIGHT, 1915
By D. C. HEATH & CO.

I F 7

PREFACE

THIS volume is the result of an attempt to put into convenient form and the smallest possible compass all the grammar needed by ordinary students of Italian. Short as the book is, it contains some paragraphs which beginners will probably skip: the longer lists of words and endings and a great part of the chapters on suffixes and irregular verbs will be useful mainly for reference. While endeavoring to make my work represent primarily the language as it is spoken and written at the present day, I have tried to give also as many obsolete forms as readers of the poets will require.

It has been my aim throughout to make the rules clear for all classes of pupils, even for those ignorant of other foreign languages, provided they understand the technical words commonly used in grammars. With this object in view, I have ascribed to the Italian vowels the pronunciation of the English ones that are nearest to them; an accurate description of the Italian sounds would, I fear, prove confusing to beginners who have had no training in phonetics. It will be easy for the instructor to explain not only the vowels, but some of the consonants, and the division of words into syllables, much better than can be done in a book like this.

The authorities I have consulted most are the dictionaries of Fanfani, Rigutini and Fanfani, Fornari (*Nuovo Bazzarini*), and Tommaseo and Bellini. I have made but little use of other grammars; I am, however, indebted to Toscani for some ideas and a few of my examples. The chapters on

syntax, and the treatment of irregular verbs, pronouns, suffixes, and the plural of words in *-co* and *-go* are almost entirely the result of original work.

In conclusion, I wish to express my gratitude to Professor Nash, of Harvard, to my friend and teacher, Cav. Filippo Orlando, of Florence, and to the gentlemen who assisted me in correcting the proof-sheets; and I wish above all to thank Professor Sheldon, of Harvard, and Professor Bendelari, of Yale, without whose aid and encouragement I should scarcely have ventured to offer this book to the public.

CAMBRIDGE, September, 1887.

NOTE TO THE REVISED EDITION

So thoroughly has the old Grammar been overhauled by Professor Wilkins and me that it now presents itself almost as a new book. The original Italian texts and bits of English prose for translation have disappeared; and in place of the set of Lessons and Exercises added to the book in 1904, Professor Wilkins has furnished a fresh series, better and more abundant than the matter it supplants. A careful revision of the rules and examples has resulted in some improvement of the former and many additions to the latter. Use has been made of the system of grammatical nomenclature recently recommended by the American committee entrusted with the study of that subject. Not least among the advantages of this edition is the marked gain in typographical clearness.

CAMBRIDGE, March, 1915.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
PRONUNCIATION	1
Sounds, Spelling, Accent, Syllabication, 1.—Additional Notes, 6.—Inflections of the Voice, 9.	
ARTICLES	11
The Definite Article, 11.—The Indefinite Article, 14.	
NOUNS	15
Gender, 15.—Number, 17.	
ADJECTIVES	20
Gender and Number, 20.—Comparison, 22.	
AUGMENTATIVES; DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS	24
Augmentatives and Diminutives, 24.—Numerals, 26.	
DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS	29
PERSONAL PRONOUNS	35
Conjunctive Forms, 35.—Disjunctive Forms, 40.—Forms of Address, 43.	
AUXILIARY VERBS	45
Auxiliaries of Voice and Tense (<i>essere</i> , <i>avére</i>), 45.—Modal Auxiliaries, 51.	
REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS	52
The Regular Verb, 53.—The Irregular Verb, 57.	
MOODS AND TENSES	61
Infinitive and Participle, 61.—Past, Present, and Future, 63.—Past Future or Conditional, 65.—Subjunctive, 65.	
CONJUNCTIONS; PREPOSITIONS; ADVERBS	68
Conjunctions, 68.—Prepositions, 70.—Adverbs, 73.	
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS	76
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS	80
First Conjugation, 81.—Second Conjugation, 82.—Third Conjugation, 85.—Fourth Conjugation, 90.	

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS	92
LESSONS AND EXERCISES	97
ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY	155
ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY	171
INDEX	181

ITALIAN GRAMMAR

PRONUNCIATION

1. The Italian alphabet has the same letters as the English, except that **k**, **w**, **x**, and **y** do not occur in native words in modern Italian.

2. The Italians distinguish seven vowels: **a**, close **e**, open **e**, **i**, close **o**, open **o**, **u**; to these may be added an intermediate **e** and **o**, used in unaccented syllables. Every vowel has a clear sound, no matter what may be its position in the word. It is never obscured; and it never tends, as do the English long vowels, to become a diphthong.

Italian vowels are all pronounced rather quickly; hence there is but little difference in quantity between accented and unaccented sounds. English-speaking students must carefully avoid drawling the accented and slighting the unaccented syllables; they should try to give to every Italian vowel about the length of **i** in 'bitter.'

a is nearly like **a** in 'father': as fava, canna, cassa, palla.

e close is nearly like **a** in 'fate': as beve, vere, stelle, messe.

e open, may be formed by trying to pronounce **e** in 'bell' with the mouth very wide open: as bella, amena, fera, pensa.

i is nearly like **ee** in 'feet': as miri, vini, fissi, spilli.

o close is nearly like **o** in 'mope': as dopo, dove, bollo, sotto.

o open is nearly like **aw** in 'saw' pronounced with the mouth wide open: as no, odi, poi, donna.

u is nearly like **oo** in 'boot': as una, cura, nulla, ruppi.

(a) The letters **i** and **u** are sometimes used to represent consonant sounds (see 4); but in formulating rules they are always counted as vowels.

1. *menti*

3. As close and open vowels are not distinguished in spelling, some rules are necessary:

1. Unaccented e and o are intermediate between close and open: as *mare*, *sea*; *amo*, *I love*.

2. e and o are close in all monosyllables¹ ending in a consonant: as *con*, *with*; *non*, *not*; *per*, *for*.

3. In monosyllables¹ and oxytones² ending in a vowel, final e is close, final o is open: as *che*, *what*; *me*, *me*; *re*, *king*; *credè*, *he believed*; *perchè*, *why*; *do*, *I give*; *Po*, *Po*; *sard*, *I shall be*; *andò*, *he went*.

áimè, chè, non, re, credè, perchè, do, Po, sard

EXCEPTIONS: (a) Final e is open in *è=is*, *re=re*, interjections (as *aimè*, *alas*; *chè*, *nonsense*), proper names (as *Noè*, *Noah*), and foreign words (as *caffè*, *coffee*). (b) Final o is close in *lo* and *o*.

4. Accented e and o are always open in the groups ie and uo: as *piede*, *foot*; *fuoco*, *fire*. e and o standing for ie and uo are open: as *ven=viene*, *he comes*; *cor=cuore*, *heart*.

5. In words that have always formed a part of the spoken language, accented e is nearly always close when it represents Latin ē or ī, open when it represents Latin ě or ae; accented o is nearly always close when it represents Latin ò or ū, open when it represents Latin ö or au. In book words accented e and o are usually open.

In all cases not covered by the first three rules, the quality of e and o will be marked in this book, an acute accent (') denoting the close, a circumflex (^) the open sound: as *avére*, *to have*; *ménō*, *less*; *tiène*, *he holds*; *liêto*, *happy*; *poêta*, *poet*; *óra*, *hour*; *mólto*, *much*; *buôno*, *good*; *pôco*, *little*; *môto*, *motion*.

4. B, f, m, p, q, v are pronounced as in English.

c, before e or i, sounds like ch in 'chin'; elsewhere it is always like English k: as *cima*, *top*; *cóme*, *how*; *dólce*, *sweet*.

¹ Not including shortened forms of words that regularly have more than one syllable.

² Words accented on the last syllable.

g, before **e** or **i**, sounds like *g* in 'gem'; elsewhere it is always like *g* in 'go': as *gatto*, *cat*; *gente*, *people*; *spingi*, *push*.

(a) A **cc** or a **gg** before **e** or **i** has merely the sound of **ch** in 'chin' or **g** in 'gem' prolonged: as *facce*, *faces*; *legghe*, *law*.

d, **l**, **n**, **t** are pronounced further forward in the mouth than in English; the tip of the tongue should touch the back of the upper front teeth: as *alto*, *high*; *dato*, *given*; *luna*, *moon*; *nudo*, *naked*; *tuôno*, *thunder*.

h is always silent: as *ahi*, *oh! ha*, *he has*.

i, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *y*: as *iêri*, *yesterday*; *paio*, *pair*; *più*, *more*. In the groups *cia*, *cio*, *ciu*, *gia*, *gio*, *giu*, an unaccented *i* serves only to show that the **c** or **g** is soft: as *faccia*, *face*; *guancia*, *cheek*; *ciò*, *that*; *giù*, *down*; *mangia*, *eat*; *raggio*, *ray*.

j is merely another way of writing **i**.

n before a **q** or a hard **c** or **g** has the sound of English *ng*: as *banca* (bang-ka), *bank*; *dunque* (dung-kwe), *therefore*; *lungo* (lung-go), *long*.

r is always rolled, the point of the tongue vibrating against the teeth: as *caro*, *dear*; *rôsso*, *red*; *per*, *for*. When **r** is double or followed by a consonant, the trill is prolonged: as *carro*, *cart*; *burro*, *butter*; *marrône*, *chestnut*; *carne*, *meat*; *pôrta*, *door*.

s is generally pronounced nearly like English *s* in 'see,' but with a somewhat sharper sound: as *sô*, *I know*; *spillo*, *pin*.

Initial **s** before a sonant (**b**, **d**, **g**, **l**, **m**, **n**, **r**, **v**) has a sound intermediate between **s** and English *z*: as *sdruciolare*, *to slip*; *slitta*, *sleigh*.

A single **s** between vowels has, in most words, the sound of English *z*: as *caso*, *case*; *cáusa*, *cause*; *viso*, *face*. But in the following cases it is pronounced like **s** in 'see,' 'mason':

(a) In *annusare*, *ásino*, *casa*, *Chiusi*, *côsa*, *così*, *desidêrio*, *naso*, *parasito*, *pêso*, *Pisa*, *pisêllo*, *pôsa*, *ripôso*, *riso*, *susina*, and their derivatives, and in some uncommon words.

(b) After the prefixes *de-*, *di-*¹, *pre-*, *pro-*, *re-*, *ri-*, *tra-*¹: as *desistere*, *disérgo*, *presúmere*, *proseguire*, *reservare*, *risólvere*, *trasudare*.

(c) In the adjective ending *-oso* and the adjective and substantive ending *-ese*: as *noioso*, *troublesome*; *inglése*, *English*; *mése*, *month*. But in *cortese*, *francese*, *lucchese*, *marchese*, *paese*, *palése*, the *s* is like English *z*. *borgheise*

(d) In the past absolute and past participle of *chiédere*, *chiúdere*, *nascóndere*, *pórre*, *rádere*, *ridere*, *rimanére*, *rispóndere*, *ródere*, and all verbs in *-éndere*; and in their compounds and derivatives: as *chiési*, *socchiuso*, *nascóse*, *rispósero*, *rasóio*, *rimase*, *corrispósi*, *rósero*, *accési*, *réso*, *scésa*.

EXCEPTIONS to this rule are *derídere*, verbs in *-clíudere*, and derivatives of *ródere*.

ti, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *w*: as *buôno*, *good*; *guardare*, *to look*; *può*, *he can*.

z and **zz** are generally pronounced like a long and vigorous *ts*: as *alzare*, *to lift*; *azióne*, *action*; *prêzzo*, *price*; *zio*, *uncle*.

In the following cases, however, **z** and **zz** sound like a prolonged *dz*:

(a) In *azzurro*, *dózzina*, *mèzzo*, *pranzo*, *ribrézzo*, *romanzo*, *zélo*, and many less common words.

(b) In verbs in *-izzare* (as *utilizzare*, *to utilize*); except *attizzare*, *dirizzare*, *guizzare*, *rizzare*, *stizzare*, and their compounds, and a few uncommon words.

séchézze

5. The following combinations are to be noted:

ch (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *k*: as *fichi* (plural of *fico*, *fig*). **sch** is like *sk*: as *schérzo*, *sport*.

gh (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *g* in 'go': as *aghi* (plural cf *ago*, *needle*).

¹ Not to be confounded with *dis-*, *tra-*: *disonóre*, *trasandare*.

gli (written *gl* if the following vowel be *i*) is nearly like English *lli* in 'million': as *figlio, son; figli, sons.*

But in Ánglia, geroglífico, glicerina, negligere and its derivatives, and a few uncommon words borrowed from the Greek or Latin, *gl* is like English *gl*.

gn is nearly like *ni* in 'onion': as *ogni, every.*

qu is always like *kw*: as *quésto, this.*

sc before *e* and *i* is nearly like *sh* in 'ship': as *uscire, to go out.*

Before all other letters it is pronounced *sk*: as *scuola, school; schérno, contempt.*

6. Every letter in Italian is distinctly and separately sounded; the only exceptions are *h*, silent *i* (see **4**), and the combinations mentioned in **5**.

<i>arte, art.</i>	<i>andái, I went.</i>	<i>padra, fear.</i>
<i>firma, signature.</i>	<i>âura, breeze.</i>	<i>sentfi, I felt.</i>
<i>furto, theft.</i>	<i>bugie, lies.</i>	<i>nói, we.</i>
<i>gíorno, day.</i>	<i>Európa, Europe.</i>	<i>pôi, then.</i>
<i>vêrso, toward.</i>	<i>miêi, my.</i>	<i>suôi, his.</i>

Where a double consonant is written, both letters must be sounded, the first at the end of the preceding, the second at the beginning of the following syllable:

<i>anno, year.</i>	<i>babbo, father.</i>	<i>fatto, done.</i>
<i>messo, put.</i>	<i>quéllo, that.</i>	<i>bócca, mouth.</i>

For *rr, zz*, and soft *cc* and *gg*, see **4**.

l, m, n, and r, when preceded by an accented vowel and followed by another consonant, are prolonged:

<i>alto (all-to), high.</i>	<i>tanto (tann-to), so much.</i>
<i>sêmpre (sêmm-pre), always.</i>	<i>parte (parr-te), part.</i>

7. The accent is nearly always the same as in Latin. In this book it will always be noted. Of the signs written here, students need use only the grave (˘), which is placed on the last syllable of oxytones and on some monosyllables; Italian writers do not agree as to the use of the other marks; many now use the acute, and not the grave, on final *e*.

8. Italian words are divided in such a way that, if possible, every syllable shall begin with a consonant:

ta-vol-i-no, <i>table.</i>	mêz-zo, <i>half.</i>
frat-tán-to, <i>meanwhile.</i>	các-cia, <i>hunt.</i>
al-l' uò-mo, <i>to the man.</i>	òg-gi, <i>to-day.</i>
nar-rá-re, <i>to relate.</i>	po-è-ta, <i>poet.</i>

In the groups s+consonant, consonant+r, those mentioned in 5, and cl, fl, gl, pl, both consonants belong to the following syllable. i=y and u=w go with the following vowel; ái, áu, ei, eu, oi are not separated.

fê-sta	ca-stí-ghi	ri-flett-e-re
te-á-tro	del-l' ác-quá	miéi
a-vrò	in-chiò-stro	al-l' áu-ra
bi-só-gno	mai-glió-re	tuôi

ADDITIONAL NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION

[The numbers prefixed to the following notes refer to the paragraphs of the foregoing chapter.]

1. The Tuscan names of the letters are:

a	é	i	énne	érte	vu or vi
bi	éffe	jé or i lúngo	ò	ésse	zêta (with z pronounced dz)
ci	gi	élle	pi	ti	
di	ácca	émme	cu	u	

They do not change in the plural. Their gender is not fixed; in general those ending in -a or -e are considered as feminine, the others as masculine. K, x, y are cappa, iccase, ipsislon, all masculine.

2. (a) The sounds á, é, ó, followed by a single consonant, are somewhat longer than the other vowels: for instance, in dátto, fêro, óvo the accented a, e, o are longer than in dâttero, véro, óve. Final accented vowels sound particularly short: as in amð, beltâ, caffè.

(b) In forming i the mouth should be made as broad as possible from side to side. For u and ó the lips should be puckered. For a and é the mouth should be opened very wide.

3. (a) If an adverb in **-ménte** is formed from an adjective containing **è** or **ò**, this vowel has, in the adverb, a secondary accent, and retains its open sound: as (*brêve*) *brêveménte*, *briefly*; (*nôbile*) *nôbilménte*, *nobly*. Furthermore, **è** and **ò** retain their quality in seeming compounds that consist, in reality, of two or more separate words: as *tostochè* = *tostoché* = *tôsto che*, *as soon as*.

(b) Past absolute forms and past participles in **-esi**, **-eso**, **-osi**, **-oso** have a close **e** or **o**; except *chiësi* (also *chiësi*), *esplôsi*, *esplôso*, *lêso*.

(c) In the suffixes **-eccio** (-a), **-esco** (-a), **-ese**, **-essa**, **-etto** (-a), **-ezzo** (-a), **-mente**, and **-mento** the **e** is always close; while in the diminutive suffix **-ello** (-a), and in the endings **-ente**, **-enza**, **-erio** (or **-ero**), and **-esimo** (-a) it is open: as *inglése*, *English*; *probabilménte*, *probably*; *prudênte*, *prudent*; *ventësimo*, *twentieth*.

(d) In the endings **-ocio**, **-one**, **-ore**, and in the suffix **-oso** (-a) the **o** is close; while in the ending **-orio**, and in **-occio** (-a), **-otto** (-a), and **-ozzo** (-a), used as suffixes to nouns or adjectives, it is open: as *vassòlio*, *tray*; *amôre*, *love*; *romitôrio*, *hermitage*; *casôtta*, *good-sized house*.

(e) In the following cases accented **e** or **o** may have either the close or the open sound: in *Giorgio*, *maestra*, *maestro*, *nego* (from *negâre*), *neve*, *organo*, *scendere*, *senza*, *siete* and *sono* (from **èssere**), *spegnere*, *Stefano*, *vendere*; and in the past future endings **-esti**, **-emmo**, **-este**. The present subjunctive forms *díeno*, *stíeno*, *stiêno* are pronounced also *diêno*, *siêno*, *stiêno*.

(f) In poetry we often find **è** for *iê*, **ò** for *uô*: as *vên=viêne*, *he comes*; *côr=cuôre*, *heart*. Simple **ò** for *uô* is very common in modern spoken Tuscan: as *bôno=buôno*, *good*; *nôvo=nûovo*, *new*.

4. c. (a) Between two vowels, of which the second is **e** or **i**, single **c** and single **g** are, in ordinary Tuscan speech, pronounced respectively like *sh* in 'ship' and *si* in 'vision': as *páce*, *peace*; *stagióne*, *season*.

(b) Between two vowels, of which the second is **a**, **o**, or **u**, a single **c** or a **q** is, in popular Tuscan speech, sounded nearly like English *h*: as *poco* (*pôho*), *little*; *di questa cosa* (*di hwéstâ hôsa*), *of this thing*. This pronunciation is regarded as inelegant.

j. Some writers use j, except after a consonant, for the i that is pronounced y: as *jeri* for *iéri*, *yesterday*; *pajo* for *páio*, *pair*. It is sometimes used also for final i in the plural of words in unaccented -io: as *specchj* (also *specchi* and occasionally *specchii*) for *spéchhi*, *mirrors*, plural of *spécchio*.

z. Aside from verbs in -izzáre, z and zz have the value dz in the following words and their derivatives:

arzillo	frizzo	magazzino	románzo	zélo
azzúrro	garzóne	mánzo	ronzio	zenít
barzelléttta	gazzélla	mézzo	rózzo	zéro
bizza	gazzéttta	orizzónte	zaffíro	zéta
brézza	góndo	órzo	zaffróne	zínco
brónzo	Lázzaro	pénzolo	zanzára	zodiaco
donzélla	lazzeréttto	pránzo	zébra	zólla
dozzina	lázzo	ribrézzo	zéffiro	zóna

also in all derivatives of the Greek *zoos*, and in many uncommon words.

5. In pronouncing *gli* and *gn* the point of the tongue should remain behind the lower teeth: as *figlio*, *son*; *ógni*, *every*.

6. If one of the words mentioned below, or any oxytone ending in a vowel, is closely followed by a word beginning with a consonant, this consonant is, in Tuscany, generally pronounced double. The words are:¹

a	dì, <i>day</i>	giù	o ⁴	sópra
che	di', <i>say</i>	ha	più	sta ²
chi	e	ho	qua	sto
cíò	è	infra	quálche	su
cóme	fa ²	intra	qui	te ³
cóntra	fè, <i>faith</i>	là	re	tra
da	fe'-féce	li	sa	tre
dà, <i>gives</i>	fo	ma	se, i/	tu
da', <i>give</i>	fra	me ³	sè	va ²
do	fu	mo'-módo	sì	vo-vádo
dóve	già	nè	so	vo'-vóglia

¹ The materials for this list were taken from D'Ovidio's article in Gröber's *Grundriß der romanischen Philologie*, I, p. 496 (2d ed., p. 644).

² Both the imperative sing. and the pres. ind. third sing.

³ The disjunctive form.

⁴ Both the conjunction *or* and the interrogative particle.

verrà da me dománi (verráddamméddománi), *he will come to my house to-morrow.* In such cases c is, of course, never pronounced like h (see 4, c, (b)).

INFLECTIONS OF THE VOICE

1. Italian speech is at once smoother and less monotonous than American: it is less interrupted by breathings, and it has far greater variations of pitch. In order to speak or read Italian well, an American must learn to breathe in speaking as he does in singing; he must inhale deeply at the beginning of the clause, and not stop again until he reaches the end of it. The following directions may be of use; they are based on the Tuscan pronunciation, and particularly on that of Siena.

2. (a) The simplest inflection in a declarative sentence is as follows: at the beginning the voice is pitched low; it rises in the middle (in earnest conversation often to a falsetto), and falls again at the end. The most emphatic word generally receives the highest tone; if there are no words after it to complete the cadence, the first words of the phrase are often repeated at the end: as **me lo dicono tutti me lo dicono**, *they all tell me so*, where the u of tutti is an octave higher than the beginning and the close of the sentence.

(b) When there is a pause on some not particularly emphatic word before the main verb, that word has a slight circumflex accent, the voice rising about one semitone and falling about three: as **fuòri di città ^ c' è úna bellissima villa**, *outside the city there's a beautiful villa*, where bellissima has the high pitch, and the a of città has the circumflex. This accent is generally heard whenever modifying clauses or phrases precede the main clause.

(c) Almost all declarative sentences are made up chiefly of these two inflections, the long rise and fall and the short circumflex. Americans must avoid breaking up their sentences by meaningless falling tones. The fall occurs in Italian, as in English, on a very emphatic word, and at the end of a sentence. It is used, also, with a verb of saying or thinking, followed by a direct quotation;

and with any word or phrase used as a vocative, except in loud calling (see 4, b): as *all'ora chiama Alfrédo e gli dice\!: Bambino\, dimmi la verità\,*, where the syllables *fre*, *bam*, and *dim* have the highest pitch.

3. (a) Questions to which the answer may be 'yes' or 'no' have either one of two circumflex accents: in the first the voice rises about five semitones and falls one; in the second, which is sometimes used in reading and in polite phrases, the voice rises and falls about an octave. Ex.: *I' h̄ai visto?* *have you seen him?* where the pitches of *I'* *h̄ai*, *vi*, and *sto* may be represented by the notes *do*, *fa*, *mi*; *ha b̄en dormito?* *did you sleep well?* where *mi* is an octave higher than *dor* and *to*. The former accent may be heard in the Irish pronunciation of English.

(b) These inflections are nearly always confined to the last few syllables of the sentence. In some questions, however, they appear twice, generally occurring first on the verb; and occasionally the circumflex on the verb is the only one.

(c) Questions that cannot be answered by 'yes' or 'no' usually begin high, the pitch depending on the emphasis. The voice then falls, but generally rises again at the last syllable, going up about three semitones: as *o cōme\ h̄ai fatto?* *how did you do it?* This accent is common among the Irish, and may be heard in England. The final rise is, however, often omitted, especially in very short sentences and in polite phrases: as *cōme sta\?* *how do you do?*

4. (a) Exclamations of surprise begin very high, and sink rapidly: as *sēnti\! no!* *un affár di niénte\!* *you don't say so!*¹ where *un* has the main stress; *per mfo bácco!* *I want to know!*¹ with the accent on *per*.

(b) In calling to persons at a distance, the Tuscans sing rather than speak; the usual tune is *do, la, sol*, the accented syllable being highest: as *Agostina!* *Augustine!* *partēnza!* *all aboard!*

¹ Popular New England equivalents.

ARTICLES

9. The article is not declined, but it agrees with its noun in gender and number.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

10. Masculine:

- (a) Sing. **il**, pl. **i**, before a word beginning with any consonant except **s** impure¹ and **z**.
 (b) Sing. **lo**, pl. **gli**, before a vowel or **s** impure or **z**.²

Before a vowel **lo** becomes **l'**; **gli** becomes **gl'** before **i**.

il pádre, <i>the father.</i>	i pádri, <i>the fathers.</i>
lo stésso pádre, <i>the same father.</i>	gli stéssi pádri, <i>the same fathers.</i>
lo sciáme, <i>the swarm.</i>	gli sciámi, <i>the swarms.</i>
lo zio, <i>the uncle.</i>	gli zzi, <i>the uncles.</i>
l' uômo, <i>the man.</i>	gli uômini, <i>the men.</i>
l' inséttò, <i>the insect.</i>	gl' insétti, <i>the insects.</i>

11. Feminine:

Sing. **la**, pl. **le**.

Before a vowel **la** becomes **l'**; **le** becomes **l'** before **e**.

la mádre, <i>the mother.</i>	le mádri, <i>the mothers.</i>
l' óra, <i>the hour.</i>	le óre, <i>the hours.</i>
l' érba, <i>the herb.</i>	l' érbe, <i>the herbs.</i>

12. When the definite article is preceded by one of the prepositions **di**, **da**, **a**, **in**, **con**, **su**, **per**, the article and prepo-

¹ That is, **s** followed by another consonant.

² **Li** is sometimes used for **gli**. Some writers use **il**, **i** before **z** and before **sce-** or **sci-**. In poetry **lo** is often used for **il**.

sition are generally contracted into one word, as shown in the following table (*con*, *per* are often uncontracted¹):

	il	i	lo	gli	la	le	l'
di, of	del	déi or de'	délio	dégli	délla	délle	dell'
da, by	dal	dái or da'	dálio	dágli	dálla	dálle	dall'
a, to	al	ái or a'	álio	ágli	álla	álle	all'
in, in	nel	néi or ne'	nélio	négli	nélla	nélle	nell'
con, with	col	cói or co'	cólio	cógli	cólla	cólle	coll'
su, on	sul	súi or su'	súlio	súgli	súlla	súlle	sull'
per, for	pel	péi or pe'	per lo	per gli	per la	per le	per l'

del pádre, *of the father.*

álio spêcchio, *to the mirror.*

cólla mádre, *with the mother.*

sull' uômo, *on the man.*

dái pádri, *by the fathers.*

négli spêcchi, *in the mirrors.*

cólle mádri, *with the mothers.*

per gli uômini, *for the men.*

(a) The word *some* is frequently rendered in Italian by *di* with the definite article. This is called the *partitive construction*.

Dátemi del vino.

Délle bêlle côse.

Give me some wine.

Some fine things.

13. In the following cases the definite article is used in Italian, though not in English:

(a) Before the possessive adjectives:

Il nôstro giardino.

I suôi fratelli.

Our garden.

His brothers.

When, however, the possessive qualifies an otherwise unmodified noun in the singular expressing relationship, the article is generally omitted: as *mía mádre*, *my mother*. For a fuller statement, see 45, a.

¹ Some writers, especially poets, prefer to keep other prepositions separate from the article.

(b) Before an abstract noun or one denoting a whole class; but not before one designating a part of a class:

L'uomo propone.
I fiori nascono dal seme.

La morte è il peggiore dei
mali.

Man proposes (i.e., all mankind).
Flowers spring from the seed (i.e., all flowers).

Death is the worst of evils (i.e., death in general, and all evils).

BUT

Il mio giardino è tutto fiorito;
rose, gigli, viole mandano un odore soave.

My garden is all in flower; roses, lilies, violets send forth a sweet fragrance (i.e., some roses, etc.).

(c) Before a noun and adjective used either in a specific or in a general (but not in a partitive) sense:

L'anno scorso.
Il povero Luigi non viene.
Gli uomini buoni.

Last year (i.e., the last year).
(The) poor Lewis doesn't come.
Good men (i.e., all good men).

BUT

Hö trovato dappertutto uomini
buoni.

I have found (some) good men everywhere.

(d) Before a title followed by a proper name:

La regina Vittoria.
Il signor Bruni.

Queen Victoria.
Mr. Brown.

It is not used, however, before **Don**, **Messér**, and **Ser**.

(e) Before family names; often before familiar given names of women; occasionally before familiar given names of men:

Il Bianchi è morto.
La Patti canta.
Conosco l'Olivia.
Viene il Tônio.

White is dead.
Patti sings.
I know Olivia.
Tony is coming.

(f) Before names of provinces, countries, and continents:

la Toscana, *Tuscany.*
la Svizzera, *Switzerland.*

all' Italia, to Italy.
per l' Europa, for Europe.

But the article is omitted after **in** in phrases that denote going to or dwelling in a country; and often after **di** or **in** when the

preposition with the name of a country is equivalent to an adjective of nationality:

Vádo in Germánia.	<i>I go to Germany.</i>
Rimango in Fráncia.	<i>I remain in France.</i>
La regína d' Inghiltérra.	<i>The queen of England</i> (i.e., the English queen).
Il víno di Spágna.	<i>The wine of Spain</i> (i.e., Spanish wine).
Il teátro in Itália.	<i>The drama in Italy</i> (i.e., the Italian drama).

The article is not used regularly with names of cities: as verdrémo Rómá, we shall see Rome. La Spézia, however, has the article; and so have a few others.

In all the above cases (beginning with 13, a) the article, unless it would be employed in English, is omitted when the noun is used as a vocative or is modified by a numeral or a pronominal adjective. It is often omitted in lists.

Signóra Mónti, cóme sta?	<i>Mrs. Monti, how do you do?</i>
Itália, ti rivédo.	<i>Italy, I see thee again.</i>
Viéni, amíco mío.	<i>Come, my friend.</i>
Dúe bellíssimi cánì.	<i>Two very fine dogs.</i>
Quésta súa ópera.	<i>This work of his.</i>
Ha parécchi vízi.	<i>He has several bad habits.</i>
Féde, speránza, caritá.	<i>Faith, hope, and charity.</i>

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE

14. Masculine:

- (a) Un before a vowel or any consonant except s impure and z.
- (b) Uno before s impure or z.¹

un pádre, a father.	un uômo, a man.
un anéllo, a ring.	ún spéccchio, a mirror.
ún sciáme, a swarm.	ún zio, an uncle.

Note that masculine un before a vowel has no apostrophe.

¹ Some writers use un before z and before sce- or sci-.

15. Feminine:

Una, which becomes un' before a vowel.

una madre, *a mother.* un' ora, *an hour.*

16. In the following cases the indefinite article, though expressed in English, is omitted in Italian:

(a) Before a predicate noun expressing occupation, condition, rank, or nationality, and not accompanied by an adjective.

Ègli è poëta, *he is a poet.* Sono marchése, *I am a marquis.*
Siéte italiáno, *you are an Italian.* È mèdico, *he is a doctor.*

(b) Generally before an antecedent (of a relative clause) used in apposition to a preceding noun modified by a definite article or a demonstrative pronoun.

L' Árno, fiúme che travérsa *The Arno, a river which traverses Florence.*

(c) After da meaning *as, like, or for.* See 79, g.

Da uðmo. *Like a man.*

NOUNS

17. Italian nouns are not declined. Possession is denoted by the preposition di:

Lo spéccchio di mio pádre. *My father's looking-glass.*

GENDER

18. There are no neuter nouns in Italian.¹

Nouns denoting males and females keep their natural gender; except creatúra, *creature;* guída, *guide;* guárdia,

¹ Latin neutrals become masculine in Italian; masculines and feminines retain their Latin gender. This rule has very few exceptions.

guard; persóna, person; sentinêlla, sentinel; spía, spy; staf-féttâ, courier; vedéttâ, scout; which are feminine.

il fratello, *the brother.*

mia sorëlla, *my sister.*

il poëta, *the poet.*

la poetessa, *the poetess.*

úna spía, *a spy.*

la nôstra guida, *our guide.*

19. Of nouns denoting objects without sex some are masculine, some feminine. Their gender can often be determined by the final letter. All Italian nouns end in -a, -e, -i, -o, or -u:¹

(a) Those ending in -a are feminine; except *colêra, cholera; qual-côsa, something;* Greek neutrals in -ma,² many geographical names, and a few other words, mostly foreign.

un' óra, *an hour.*

un telegrámma, *a telegram.*

il Canadà, *Canada.*

il sofà, *the sofa.*

(b) Of those ending in -e and -i some are masculine, some feminine. All ending in -zíone, -gióne, or -údine are feminine.

il fíume, *the river.*

la páce, *peace.*

un dì, *a day.*

úna metrôpoli, *a metropolis.*

la ragiône, *the reason.*

la servitúdine, *service.*

(c) Those ending in -o are masculine; except *máno, hand.*

il ginôcchio, *the knee.*

la máno, *the hand.*

(d) Those ending in -u are feminine; except *soprappiù, surplus,* and a few foreign words.

la virtù, *virtue.*

il bambù, *bamboo.*

20. Any other part of speech (except an adjective³) used as a noun must be masculine: as *il viaggiáre, traveling.*

21. Masculine names of trees in -o or -e have a feminine form in -a or -e respectively, denoting their fruit; but *il dát-*

¹ A few foreign nouns used in Italian end in a consonant: as *lápis, pencil* (*i lápis, the pencils*). Nouns in -o or -e often drop that vowel if the preceding consonant is l, n, or r: as *cáne = can, dog.*

² Mostly scientific terms.

³ Adjectives of course have the gender of the nouns they represent. An adjective used as an abstract noun is masculine: *il bêllo, the beautiful = beauty.*

tero, *date*, il fico, *fig*, il limóne, *lemon*, il pómø, *apple*, are always the same, whether denoting the tree or the fruit.

un susíno, <i>a plum tree.</i>	tína susína, <i>a plum.</i>
il nóce, <i>the walnut tree.</i>	la nóce, <i>the walnut.</i>
quéstí fichi, <i>these fig trees, these figs.</i>	

NUMBER

22. Feminines in unaccented *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e*.

la stráda, <i>the street.</i>	le stráde, <i>the streets.</i>
úna bugia, <i>a lie.</i>	le bugie, <i>lies.</i>

(a) Feminines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-che* and *-ghe* respectively (the *h* being inserted merely to indicate that the *c* and *g* keep their hard sound).

un' óca, <i>a goose.</i>	mólte óche, <i>many geese.</i>
la bottéga, <i>the shop.</i>	parécchie bottéghe, <i>several shops.</i>

(b) Nouns in unaccented *-cia* and *-gia* form their plural in *-ce* and *-ge* respectively.¹

la guáncia, <i>the cheek.</i>	le guánce, <i>the cheeks.</i>
úna ciliégia, <i>a cherry.</i>	tánté ciliége, <i>so many cherries.</i>

23. Masculines in unaccented *-a* and all nouns in unaccented *-o* and *-e* (not *-ie*) form their plural in *-i*.²

un poéta, <i>a poet.</i>	dúe poéti, <i>two poets.</i>
lo zío, <i>the uncle.</i>	gli zii, <i>the uncles.</i>
la máno, <i>the hand.</i>	le mísé máni, <i>my hands.</i>
un mése, <i>a month.</i>	tre mési, <i>three months.</i>
la cornice, <i>the frame.</i>	quáattro corníci, <i>four frames.</i>

(a) Masculines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-chi* and *-ghi* respectively.

il monárca, <i>the monarch.</i>	i monárchi, <i>the monarchs.</i>
il colléga, <i>the colleague.</i>	i colléghi, <i>the colleagues.</i>

¹ Provincia has provincie. In general borrowed words and words whose plural is necessarily very rare keep the *i*: audácia, audácie.

² In old Italian and in poetry words in *-ello* and *-ale* often form their plural in *-egli* or *-ei*, *-agli* or *-ai*: capélico, capégli; animále, animái.

(b) Nouns in unaccented -io form their plural by changing -io to -i (often written i, j, or ii).

lo spēcchio, <i>the mirror.</i>	gli spēcchi, <i>the mirrors.</i>
il ciliēgio, <i>the cherry tree.</i>	i ciliēgi, <i>the cherry trees.</i>

(c) Nouns in -go form their plural in -ghi. Nouns in -co form their plural in -chi if the penult is accented, otherwise in -ci.

il castigo, <i>the punishment.</i>	i castighi, <i>the punishments.</i>
un catálogo, <i>a catalogue.</i>	dúe catáloghi, <i>two catalogues.</i>
il fico, <i>the fig.</i>	cinque fíchi, <i>five figs.</i>
antico, <i>ancient.</i>	gli antichi, <i>the ancients.</i>
un mēdico, <i>a doctor.</i>	séi mēdici, <i>six doctors.</i>

This rule has a number of exceptions. In the following lists, words whose irregular plural is rare are omitted.

1. Compound nouns in -logo denoting persons engaged in the sciences, and all compound nouns in -fago form their plural in -gi.¹

il fisiōlogo, <i>the physiologist.</i>	i fisiōlogi, <i>physiologists.</i>
antropōfago, <i>cannibal.</i>	antropōfagi, <i>cannibals.</i>

2. The following words form their plural in -ci, although the penult is accented:

amico	grêco	inimico	nemico	pôrco ²
-------	-------	---------	--------	--------------------

Grêco has a regular plural in the expression vini grêchi.

3. The following words form their plural in -chi, although the penult is unaccented:

âbbaco	fârmaco	lâstrico	rammârlico	strâscico
acrôstico	indaco	mânico	rísico	tôssico
cárico ³	intônaco	párroco	sciátîco	träffico
diméntico ³	intrínseco	pízzico	stômaco	vâlico ⁴

Acrôstico and fârmaco have also regular plurals.

¹ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: flemmagôgo, idragôgo, metallûrgo, sârgo (also reg. plur.), sortilego. *Magicians* = mághî; *Magi* = mági.

² Likewise the rare words: aprico, lombrîco (also reg.), uvamîco, vîco.

³ Likewise its compounds.

⁴ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: filâccico, mántaco (also reg.), ostâtico, sfilâcico, stâtico (noun), úncico.

(d) The following masculines in -o have an irregular plural in -a which is feminine:

centináio, *hundred.*
migliáio, *thousand.*

míglia, *mile.*
páio, *pair.*

uôvo, *egg.*

Many masculines in -o have this irregular feminine plural in -a besides the regular masculine plural in -i. The most common are:

bráccio, *arm.*
díto, *finger.*
frútto, *fruit.*
ginôcchio, *knee.*

un páio, *a pair.*
il mío bráccio, *my arm.*
il lábbro, *the lip.*
un ôsso, *a bone.*

grído, *shout.*
lábbro, *lip.*
légno, *wood.*
mêmbro, *member.*

sétte páia, *seven pairs.*
le túe bráccia, *thy arms.*
le lábbra or i lábbri, *the lips.*
le ôssa or gli ôssi, *the bones.*

Bráccio, ginôcchio, lábbro, and oréccchio nearly always have the irregular plural when denoting the two *arms*, *knees*, *lips*, or *ears* belonging to the same body.

24. All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in -i, -ie, -u, an accented vowel, or a consonant, are invariable.

il re, *the king.*
il bríndisi, *the toast.*
úna spécie, *a kind.*
la virtù, *virtue.*
úna città, *a city.*
l' ômnibus, *the omnibus.*

i re, *the kings.*
i bríndisi, *the toasts.*
ôtto spécie, *eight kinds*
le virtù, *the virtues.*
diêci città, *ten cities.*
gli ômnibus, *the omnibusses.*

25. The following nouns have irregular plurals:

búe, *ox*, pl. buôi.
dío, *god*, pl. dêi.¹

móglie, *wife*, pl. mógli.
uômo, *man*, pl. uômini.

¹ The article used with dêi is gli: gli dêi.

ADJECTIVES

26. Adjectives agree with their nouns in gender and number. An adjective modifying two nouns of different genders is generally put in the masculine plural.

Il gáutto è pulito.	<i>The cat is neat.</i>
Stánze pulíte.	<i>Neat rooms.</i>
Una cásá e un giardíno bellíni.	<i>A pretty house and garden.</i>
La ragázza è bellína.	<i>The girl is pretty.</i>

27. Numeral and pronominal adjectives, bêllo, brávo, buôno, and the commonest adjectives of size and quantity, precede their nouns. Adjectives of nationality, shape, and material follow.

Adjectives whose use is prompted by emotion, and adjectives used in a figurative sense, generally precede.

Otherwise, of the noun and adjective, the one that contains the chief idea comes last.

Due cáni.	<i>Two dogs.</i>
Trôppo páne.	<i>Too much bread.</i>
La buôna madre.	<i>The good mother.</i>
Le grândi cittâ.	<i>Great cities.</i>
Un libro francése.	<i>A French book.</i>
Quésta pálla rotónda.	<i>This round ball.</i>
Pôver' uômo!	<i>Poor man!</i>
Úna néra menzógna.	<i>A black falsehood.</i>
La vôstra gentilíssima lêttera.	<i>Your kind letter.</i>
È un uômo gentilíssimo.	<i>He is a kind man.</i>

GENDER AND NUMBER

28. Adjectives ending in -o are masculine, and form their feminine in -a. Adjectives in -e are invariable in the singular.

buôno stivaléttò, <i>good boot.</i>	buôna scárpa, <i>good shoe.</i>
ragázzo felice, <i>happy boy.</i>	ragázza felice, <i>happy girl.</i>

29. Adjectives form their plural in the same way as nouns (see 22, 23): -o, pl. -i; -a, pl. -e; -e, pl. always -i.

séi buôni cassettóni, *six good bureaus.*

dúe uômini felici, *two happy men.*

(a) **Parécchi**, *several*, has for its feminine **parécchie**.

(b) **Quálche**, *some*, is used only in the singular, even when the meaning is plural: as **quálche volta**, *sometimes*.

(c) When preceding a noun, **bêllo**, *beautiful*, has forms similar to those of the definite article; and **Sânto**, *Saint*, and **grânde**, *great*, have corresponding forms in the singular.¹ **Buôno**, *good*, when preceding its noun, has a singular similar to the indefinite article. The masculine of these words (which is the only irregular part) is, therefore, as follows:

Before any consonant except s impure or z: **bel**, *San*, *gran*, *buon*; pl. **bêi**, *Sânti*, *grândi*, *buôni*.

Before s impure or z: **bêllo**, *Sânto*, *grânde*, *buôno*; pl. **bêgli**, *Sânti*, *grândi*, *buôni*.

Before a vowel: **bell'**, *Sant'*, *grand'*, *buon*; pl. **bêgli**, *Sânti*, *grândi*, *buôni*.

When used *after* a noun or in the predicate these adjectives have their full forms (**bêllo**, **bêlli**, *Sânto*, *Sânti*, *grânde*, *grândi*, *buôno*, *buôni*).

Un **bêl** quâdro.

A fine picture.

Dûe **bêi** lètti.

Two fine beds.

Un **bêllo** scâffâle.

A fine bookcase.

Quâttrò **bêgli** stivâli.

Four fine boots.

Un **bell'** ândito.

A fine hall.

Môlti **bêgli** orolôgi.

Many fine clocks.

Una **bêlla** stûfa.

A fine stove.

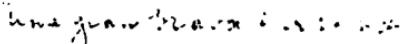
Parécchie **belle** tênde.

Several fine curtains.

Il palazzo è **bêllo**.

The palace is fine.

¹ **Gran** is, moreover, often used in the fem. sing. (for **grânde**), and sometimes in the plur. (for **grândi**); it is regularly used before fem. sing. nouns in -e, and in the expression **fina gran bêlla** (or **brûtta**) cosa. **Grânde**, on the other hand, is occasionally used for **gran**.



Le sèdie son bélle.	<i>The chairs are beautiful.</i>
San Piétro, Sánto Stéfano e Sant' António.	<i>St. Peter, St. Stephen, and St. Anthony.</i>
Un gran fuôco.	<i>A big fire.</i>
Grândi camíni.	<i>Big fireplaces.</i>
Il grânde scaldíno.	<i>The big foot-warmer.</i>
Diêci grândi spilli.	<i>Ten big pins.</i>
Un grânde sciáme.	<i>A great swarm.</i>
Il grânde zípolo.	<i>The large bung.</i>
Un grand' armádio.	<i>A big wardrobe.</i>
Vénti grândi álberi.	<i>Twenty big trees.</i>
Una grânde cámara.	<i>A large bedroom.</i>
Cinque grândi finêstre.	<i>Five big windows.</i>
Il salôtto è móltô grânde.	<i>The parlor is very large.</i>
Un buôni lúme.	<i>A good lamp.</i>
Buôni fiammiferi.	<i>Good matches.</i>
Il buôno sgabéllò.	<i>The good stool.</i>
Nôve buôni scolári.	<i>Nine good pupils.</i>
Il buôni ólio.	<i>The good oil.</i>
Pareéchi buôni ághi.	<i>Several good needles.</i>
Una buôna cucína.	<i>A good kitchen.</i>
Le buône candéle.	<i>The good candles.</i>
Il bambíño è buôno.	<i>The child is good.</i>

30. Any adjective of either gender or either number may be used as a noun.

I buôni, *the good.*

la bêlla, *the beautiful woman.*

COMPARISON

31. All Italian adjectives form their comparative by prefixing *più*, *more*, and their superlative by prefixing the definite article to the comparative.

bêllo, *beautiful*; *più bêllo*, *more beautiful*; *il più bêllo*, *the most beautiful*.

lúngo, *long*; *più lúngo*, *longer*; *il più lúngo*, *the longest*.

When the superlative immediately follows the noun, this article is omitted.

La vía piû córta.

The shortest way.

(a) The following adjectives have an irregular comparison in addition to the regular one:

alto, high; più alto or superiore; il più alto or il superiore.
basso, low; più basso or inferiore; il più basso or l' inferiore.
buono, good; più buono or migliore¹; il più buono or il migliore.
cattivo, bad; più cattivo or peggiore¹; il più cattivo or il peggiore.
grande, big; più grande or maggiore; il più grande or il maggiore.
piccolo, small; più piccolo or minore; il più piccolo or il minore.

Higher and *lower* are commonly rendered by *più alto* and *più basso*; *superiore* and *inferiore* generally mean *superior* and *inferior*. *Migliore* and *peggiore* are more used than *più buono* and *più cattivo*, which have the same sense. *Larger* and *smaller* are generally *più grande* and *più piccolo*; *maggiore* and *minore* usually signify *older* and *younger*.

Noi siamo migliori di loro. *We are better than they.*
 Questa sala da pranzo è la *This dining room is the biggest.*
 più grande.

Pietro è il fratello minore. *Peter is the youngest brother.*

32. The adverb *less* is expressed by *méno*, *least* by *il méno*. *As . . . as, so . . . as* are *tánto . . . quanto*, *tánto . . . como, così . . . como*, or simply *quanto*.

Quella stanza è la *méno* *That room is the least pretty.*
 bellina.

Paolo non è *tánto* buono *como* *Paul isn't so good as Robert.*
 Roberto.

Giovanni è *alto* *quanto* Filippo. *John is as tall as Philip.*

33. *Than* is *che*.

L' albergo è *più grande* *che* *The hotel is bigger than it is beautiful.*
 bello.

But before a noun, a pronoun, or a numeral *than* is rendered by the preposition *di* (see 12).

Riccardo è peggiore *di* me. *Richard is worse than I.*
 Voi siete più ricchi *del* re. *You are richer than the king.*
 Méno *di* cinque. *Less than five.*

¹ The adverbs *better* and *worse* are *méglie* and *peggio*.

If, however, this *than* is preceded by a word meaning *rather*, it is translated *che*.

Piuttôsto la môrte *che* il disonore. *Rather death than dishonor.*

Before an inflected verb *than* is *che non* or *di quel che*. If the verb has a negative subject, *than* is *che*.

Abbaia più *che non* môrde. *He barks more than he bites.*

Prometto meno *di quel che* do. *I promise less than I give.*

Più lieto *che* nessún figlio lo era stâto. *Happier than any son had been.*

34. The more . . . the more, the less . . . the less, are *più . . . più*, *ménno . . . ménno*. *More* and *less* after a number are *di più*, *di ménno*. In speaking of time, *longer* after a negative is *più*.

Più stûdio, più impáro.

The more I study, the more I learn.

Trénta giórni di ménno.

Thirty days less.

Non lo vediámó più.

We see him no longer.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS

AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE ENDINGS

35. Instead of a word expressing size or quality, the Italians often use a suffix. This suffix may be added to a noun, an adjective, or an adverb. When added to an adjective, and generally when added to a noun, it takes the gender of the word to which it is affixed: occasionally, however, a suffix with masculine termination is added to a feminine noun, which thereby becomes masculine. A word loses its final vowel before a suffix; but the preceding consonant, if it be **c** or **g**, must keep its former quality: as Cárlo+íno=Carlinó, vóce+óne=vocióne, pôco+fíno=pochíno, adágio+íno=adagíno.

(a) The commonest ending is **-íssimo** (fem. **-íssima**), *very*, which in general is added only to adjectives and adverbs. Adverbs in **-ménte** add the **-íssima** before the **-ménte** (see 85). Any adjective may take it, and it is very often used in cases where it would be entirely superfluous in English.

<i>largo, wide.</i>	<i>largíssimo, very wide.</i>
<i>bene, well.</i>	<i>bemíssimo, very well.</i>
<i>grande, big.</i>	<i>grandíssimo, very big.</i>
<i>fa un tempo bellissimo, it's beautiful weather.</i>	<i>bellissimamente, very beautifully.</i>

(b) The principal suffix denoting bigness is **-ónie**; it is always masculine, but has a rare feminine form, **-óna**.

<i>libro, book.</i>	<i>un librónie, a big book.</i>
<i>casa, house.</i>	<i>un casónie, a large house.</i>
<i>boccia, decanter.</i>	<i>una bocciona, a big decanter.</i>

(c) The most important suffixes denoting smallness are **-íno**, **-cino**, **-icino**, **-iccino**, **-etto**, **-ello**, **-cêllo**, **-icêllo**, **-arêllo**, **-erêllo**, **-otto**, **-uccio**, **-uzzo**, **-uôlo**, with their fem. **-ina**, etc. These endings, especially **-uccio**, are often used to express affection; some of them may be used to express pity or contempt. **Otto** sometimes means *somewhat large* instead of *small*.

<i>sorella, sister.</i>	<i>sorellina, little sister.</i>
<i>bello, beautiful.</i>	<i>bellíno, pretty.</i>
<i>brutto, ugly.</i>	<i>bruttíno, rather ugly.</i>
<i>piázza, square.</i>	<i>piazzéttá, little square.</i>
<i>Giòrgio, George.</i>	<i>Giorgéttó, Georgie.</i>
<i>campána, bell.</i>	<i>campanélló, little bell.</i>
<i>áquila, eagle.</i>	<i>áquilôtto, eaglet.</i>
<i>casa, house.</i>	<i>casôtta, rather large house.</i>
<i>Giovánni, John.</i>	<i>Giovanníuccio, dear little Johnny.</i>
<i>pazzo, mad.</i>	<i>pazzarêlla, poor mad woman.</i>
<i>pôvero, poor.</i>	<i>poveríni, poor things!</i>

(d) The ending **-accio** denotes worthlessness.

<i>rôba, stuff, goods.</i>	<i>robâccia, trash.</i>
<i>têmpo, weather.</i>	<i>tempâccio, nasty weather.</i>
<i>Alfrêdo, Alfred.</i>	<i>Alfredâccio, naughty Alfred.</i>

36. Of the endings added to nouns *-íno* is by far the most common; the only ones that are freely used to form new compounds are *-íno*, *little*, *-íne*, *great*, *-úccio*, *dear*, and *-áccio*, *bad*. In very many cases, endings lose their character of independent suffixes, and become inseparable parts of certain words, whose meanings they often change: as *scála*, *stairway*; *scalíno*, *stair*; *scaléttó*, *ladder*. So *brother*, *sister* are always *fratélló*, *sorélla*. Some suffixes (as *-uôlo*) are rarely used except in this way. Others (as *-cino*, *-icíno*, *-êllo*, *-cêllo*, *-icêllo*, *-arêllo*, *-erêllo*) cannot be attached to any word at pleasure, their use being determined by precedent or euphony.

37. Sometimes several suffixes are added at once to the same word: as *ladro*, *thief*; *ladróne*, *terrible thief*; *ladroncêllo*, *terrible little thief*.

NUMERALS

38. The cardinal numerals are:

1, úno.	15, quíndici.	28, ventóttó or vent' ôtto.	101, centúno or cent' úno.
2, dûe.	16, sé dici.	29, ventindóve.	105, centocíngue.
3, tre.	17, diciassétte.	30, trénta.	115, centoquindecíni.
4, quâtro.	18, diciôtto.	31, trentúno or trent' úno.	125, cento venti- cínque.
5, cíngue.	19, diciannôve.	32, trentadúe.	200, dugênto or duecênto.
6, sêi.	20, vénti.	40, quarânta.	250, dugênto cin- quânta.
7, sétte.	21, ventúno or vent' úno.	50, cinquânta.	300, trecênto.
8, ôtto.	22, ventidúe.	60, sessânta.	400, quattrocento.
9, nôve.	23, ventitré.	70, settânta.	1000, mille.
10, diêci.	24, ventiquâttro.	80, ottânta.	2000, dûe mila.
11, fíndici.	25, venticíngue.	90, novânta.	
12, dôdici.	26, ventisêi.	100, cênto.	
13, tré dici.	27, ventisétte.		
14, quattordici.			

Úno has a feminine *úna*; when used *adjectively* it has the same forms as the indefinite article; so also *ventúno*, etc.

The plural of **mille** is **mila**. *A million* is **un milione** or **miliōne**, of which the plural is **miliōni** or **milliōni**.

1. No conjunction is used between the different parts of a number: as **dugēnto quarānta**, *two hundred and forty*. No indefinite article is used before **cēnto** and **mille**: as **cēnto libri**, *a hundred books*.

2. **Cēnto**, **dugēnto**, etc., when followed by another numeral of more than two syllables may lose the final syllable **-to**: as **seicēnto cinquānta** or **seicencincinquānta**, *six hundred and fifty*.

3. *Eleven hundred, twelve hundred*, etc., must be rendered **millecēnto**, **mille dugēnto**, etc.: as **mille ottocēnto ottantasētte**, 1887.

4. *Both, all three*, etc., are **tūtti** (fem. **tūtte**) e **dūe**, **tūtti** (fem. **tūtte**) e **tre**, etc.

(a) If the noun modified by **ventūno**, **trentūno**, etc., follows this numeral, it is regularly in the singular; as **trentūn giorno**, *thirty-one days*. Sometimes, however, the noun precedes the numeral, and then it is in the plural.

Sessantūna lira, or **lire sessantūna** *Sixty-one francs.*

(b) In dates the definite article is prefixed to the number representing the year, if that number does not follow the name of a month. For instance, 1915 is **il 1915**.

Nel mille ottocēnto ottanta-sētte. *In 1887.*

(c) *What time is it?* is **che óra è?** or **che óre sóno?** *It is six*, etc., is **sóno le sēi**, etc., **óre** being understood. *One o'clock* is **il tócco**.

Sóno le dūe e mēzzo.

It's half past two.

Sóno le tre e diéci.

It's ten minutes past three.

Ci máncano vēnti minúti álle quáttro.

It's twenty minutes to four.

Sóno le cíngue méno un quárto.

It's a quarter to five.

39. The ordinal numerals are:

1st, <i>primo</i> .	12th, <i>duodécimo</i> or <i>décimo segundo</i> .	20th, <i>ventésimo</i> .
2d, <i>segundo</i> .		21st, <i>ventésimo primo</i> or <i>ventunesimo</i> .
3d, <i>térzo</i> .	13th, <i>tredicésimo</i> or <i>décimo tercer</i> .	22d, <i>ventésimo segundo</i> or <i>ventiduésimo</i> .
4th, <i>quárto</i> .		
5th, <i>quinto</i> .	14th, <i>quattordicésimo</i> or <i>décimo quarto</i> .	30th, <i>trentésimo</i> .
6th, <i>sésto</i> .		100th, <i>centésimo</i> .
7th, <i>séttimo</i> .	15th, <i>quindicésimo</i> or <i>décimo quinto</i> .	101st, <i>centésimo primo</i> .
8th, <i>ottavo</i> .		115th, <i>centoquindicésimo</i> .
9th, <i>nôno</i> .	16th, <i>décimo sésto</i> .	200th, <i>dugentésimo</i> .
10th, <i>dêimo</i> .	17th, <i>décimo séttimo</i> .	1000th, <i>millésimo</i> .
11th, <i>undêimo</i> or <i>décimo primo</i> .	18th, <i>décimo ottavo</i> .	2000th, <i>duemilésimo</i> .
	19th, <i>décimo nôno</i> .	

All of them form their feminines and plurals like other adjectives in **-o**.

Le settantésime quinte cose. *The 75th things.*

(a) Ordinal numerals are used after the words *book*, *chapter*, and the names of rulers; but no article intervenes.

<i>Carlo secondo.</i>	<i>Charles the Second.</i>
<i>Pio nôno.</i>	<i>Pius IX.</i>
<i>Libro têrzo.</i>	<i>Book the Third.</i>
<i>Capítulo quárto.</i>	<i>Chapter four.</i>

(b) For the day of the month, except the first, a cardinal number is used.

<i>Il di cinque d' aprile</i> or <i>il</i> <i>cinque aprile.</i>	<i>The fifth of April.</i>
<i>Il primo di mággio.</i>	<i>The first of May.</i>

(c) *The fourteenth century* is *il sêcolo décimo quárto* or *il Trecento* (*i. e.* *mille trecento*). *Il Dugênto*, *il Quattrocênto*, *il Cinquecênto* are often used for the 13th, 15th, and 16th centuries, and the later century names may be similarly abbreviated.

(d) *A third, a fourth, a fifth*, etc., are *un têrzo*, *un quárto*, *un quinto*, etc. *Half* is *la metà*; the adjective *half* is *mêzzo*.

40. *A couple or a pair* is *un páio*. *A dozen* is *úna dozína*. The expressions *úna decína*, *úna ventína*, *úna trentína*, etc., *un centináio*, *un migliaio*, mean *about ten*, *about twenty*, etc. (see 23, d). *Once*, *twice*, etc., are *úna vólta*, *dúe vólte*, etc.

Ún páio di scárpe.

A pair of shoes.

Úna cinquantína di persóne.

Some fifty persons.

L' ho visto parécchie vólte.

I've seen it several times.

DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

41. For the indefinite pronouns, see 86-91.

42. 1. The demonstratives used adjectively are *quésto*,¹ *this*, and *quéllo* or *cotésto*, *that*. *Cotésto* (also *codéstó*) is used of objects associated with the person addressed. *Quésto* and *cotésto* are inflected like other adjectives; but they generally drop o before a vowel. *Quéllo* is inflected like *béllo* (see 29, c).

quést' uômo, *this man.*

quéste ragázze, *these girls.*

quél bambíno, *that infant.*

quéi fanciúlli, *those children.*

quéll' amico, *that friend.*

quégli spôsi, *that couple.*

quéllo zío, *that uncle.*

quélle signóre, *those ladies.*

Quésto and *quéllo* are also used substantively for *this*, *that*, *this one*, *that one*: as *fáte quésto*, *non fáte quéllo*, *do this*, *don't do that*.

2. *This man* is translated by *quésti*; *that man* by *quégli*, *quéi*, or *cotésti* (rare); these words are invariable, refer only to persons, and are used only in the nominative singular. *Costuí* and *coluí* mean respectively the same as *quésti* and

¹ In archaic or literary Italian *esso* is sometimes used for *quésto*.

quégli, but are not defective, having a feminine singular costéi, coléi, and a plural (both genders alike) costóro, colóro. Costúi is often used in a depreciative sense.

Quésti è francése e quégli è tedésco.
This man is French and that one is German.

Chi è costúi?
Who is this fellow?
 Párlo di colúi.
I speak of that man.

3. Ciò, *this, that*, is invariable, and represents a whole idea, not a single word:

Ciò è véro.
That's so.

(a) Quéllo and quésto, quégli and quésti mean also *the former, the latter*.

(b) *He who* is colúi che, or simply chi. *The one who, whom, which, that which, what*, is quéllo che or quél che.

Chi lavóra or colúi che lavóra.
He who works.
 Quél che dico fo.
The one I mean.
 A quél che sento.
From what I hear.

43. The interrogative *who, whom*, is chi. *What?* used substantively is che, che côsa, or côsa.¹ *What?* used adjectively is che or quále. *Which?* is quále.

Quále has a plural quálí; chi and che are invariable.

How much? is quánto (-a); *how many?* is quánti (-e).

Chi védo?	<i>Whom do I see?</i>
Di chi parláte?	<i>Of whom do you speak?</i>
Ditemi chi viène.	<i>Tell me who is coming.</i>
Che vógliono?	<i>What do they want?</i>
Che côsa dice?	<i>What does he say?</i>
Che or quálí libri avéte com-práto?	<i>What books did you buy?</i>
Quále di quésti volúmi è il primo?	<i>Which of these volumes is the first?</i>
Quánte vólte te l'ho détto!	<i>How many times I have told you!</i>

¹ Côsa (as côsa dice?) is generally avoided in written Italian. Note that chi is used in *indirect* as well as in direct questions.

(a) The interrogative *whose* is *di chi*.

Di chi è questo biglietto? *Whose card is this?*

(b) In exclamations *what a, what* are rendered by *che* or *quale* without any article.

Che bel paese! *What a beautiful country!*

44. The principal relative pronouns are *che*, *cui*, *il quale*: they are all applied to both persons and things, and mean *who*, *whom*, *which*, or *that*. *Il quale* is inflected (*la quale*, *i quale*, *le quale*). *Che* and *cui* are invariable: in general *che* is used only as subject and direct object, *cui* only after prepositions or as indirect object. In poetry *onde* is often used to signify *of which* or *from which*.

La lingua che si parla.	<i>The language which we speak.</i>
L'uomo del quale si tratta.	<i>The man of whom we are speaking.</i>
Le persone a cui or alle quali parlo.	<i>The persons to whom I speak.</i>
Lo scritto di cui parlo.	<i>The work I am speaking of.</i>

1. As subject or direct object *che* is preferred to *il quale*, unless clearness requires the latter.

Le figlie che studiano.	<i>The daughters who are studying.</i>
Le figlie degli Americani, le quali studiano.	<i>The Americans' daughters, who are studying.</i>

2. The relative *whose* is *il cui* or *del quale*.

Una signora, il cui nome è Lucia.	<i>A lady whose name is Lucy.</i>
Un uomo, le cui figlie conosco.	<i>A man whose daughters I know.</i>
L'autore, del cui libro si parla.	<i>The author whose book we are speaking of.</i>
Le chiese delle quali si vedono le cupole.	<i>The churches whose domes we see.</i>

3. The relative cannot be omitted in Italian.

Le case che ho comprato. *The houses I have bought.*

(a) *Such . . . as* is *tale . . . quale*; in poetry *tale*, *quale* have a plural *tai*, *quai* instead of *tali*, *quali*. *As much as* is *tanto quanto*; *as many as* is *tanti quanti*.

Quale è il padre *tale* è il figlio. *As is the father, so is the son.*

(b) *He who, him who* is *chi* or *colui che* (see 42, b).

Chi ha la sanità è *ricco*.

He who has health is *rich*.

Colui che lavora è *contento*.

He who works is *satisfied*.

Amiamo chi ci ama.

We love him who loves us.

(c) *Whoever* is *chiunque*; *whatever* as a pronoun is *tutto quel che* or *checcchè*, as an adjective *quale che*, *qualunque che*, *qualunque*, *per quanto*. These words, excepting *tutto quel che*, all take the subjunctive. *Checcchè* is now but little used.

Chiunque siate.

Whoever you may be.

Checcchè facciate, fátelo bène.

Whatever you do, do it well.

Tutto quel che voléte.

Whatever you wish.

Quali che siano i vostri motivi.

Whatever your motives may be.

Qualunque siano i suoi talenti.

Whatever his talents may be.

In qualunque státo che fo mi trövi.

In whatever condition I may find myself.

Per quanto richézze égli ábia.

Whatever riches he may have.

45. The possessive pronouns and adjectives are:

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
	MASC.	FEM.	MASC.	FEM.
<i>my, mine:</i>	il mio	la mia	i miei	le mie
<i>thy, thine:</i>	il tuo	la tua	i tuoi	le tue
<i>his, her, hers, its:</i>	il suo	la sua	i suoi	le sue
<i>our, ours:</i>	il nôstre	la nôstra	i nôstri	le nôstre
<i>your, yours:</i>	il vôstro	la vôstra	i vôstri	le vôstre
<i>their, theirs:</i>	il lóro	la lóro	i lóro	le lóro

Lóro is invariable; the others agree with the object possessed:

il mio násō, *my nose.*

i vôstri ócchi, *your eyes.*

la súa bócca, *his, her mouth.*

le lóro lábbra, *their lips.*

When the possessive stands alone in the predicate, the article is omitted if the possessive is used adjectively. To

determine whether the possessive is used adjectively, consider the sentence as the answer to a question. If the sentence answers a question beginning with *whose*, there is no article; if it answers a question beginning with *which*, the article is used.

Quésto cappêllo è mio.

This hat is mine. Whose hat?

Mine.

Quésto cappêllo è il mio.

This hat is mine. Which hat?

This one.

(a) The article (unless it might be used in English) is omitted before the possessive:

1. When a numeral, an adjective of quantity, or a demonstrative or interrogative adjective precedes it:

Dúe cáni suði.

Two dogs of his.

BUT I dúe cáni suði.

The two dogs of his or his two dogs.

Mólti miëi amfci.

Many friends of mine.

BUT I mólti miëi amfci.

The many friends of mine or my many friends.

Quésto tuo difetto.

This fault of thine.

2. When the possessive forms part of a title:

Vôstra Maestà.

Your Majesty.

Súa Altézza.

His Highness.

3. When the possessive modifies a noun used in the vocative (in this case the possessive generally follows its noun): as amfco mio, *my friend!*

4. The article is generally omitted also when the possessive precedes a noun in the *singular* expressing relationship: as nôstra mâdre, *our mother*; compare le mie figlie, *my daughters*. But if the noun has a diminutive ending, or another adjective accompanies the noun, the article is not omitted:

Il tuo fratellino.

Thy little brother.

La vôstra gentilissima sorëlla.

Your kind sister.

Sometimes it is omitted before a *predicate* noun that does not express relationship:

Quésto signóre è suo maestro. *This gentleman is his teacher.*
Io lo credéva mio amico. *I thought him my friend.*

5. The article is omitted also in certain standing phrases, such as:

da párté mia, <i>for me.</i>	a môdo suo, <i>in his own way.</i>
per amór mio, <i>for my sake.</i>	è cólpa vòstra, <i>it's your fault.</i>
in casa nôstra, <i>in our house.</i>	a cásá súa, <i>to his house.</i>

(b) The possessive, when not necessary for clearness, is usually replaced by a definite article.

Cóme sta la mámma?	<i>How is your mother?</i>
Ha perdúto il giudízio.	<i>He has lost his senses.</i>
Báttono i piédi.	<i>They stamp their feet.</i>

(c) When the name of the thing possessed is direct object of a verb, the Italians often use instead of the possessive a conjunctive personal pronoun (see 47) and a definite article.

Si stráppa i capélli.	<i>He tears his hair</i> (<i>lit.</i> , he tears to himself the hairs).
Mi táglio il díto.	<i>I cut my finger</i> (<i>I cut to myself the finger</i>).
Il cáne gli agguantò la gámba.	<i>The dog seized his leg</i> (<i>seized to him the leg</i>).

If the thing possessed be a part of the body or clothing, this construction is frequent, even when the name of the thing is not object of a verb.

Mi duôle il cépo.	<i>My head aches</i> (<i>to me aches the head</i>).
-------------------	---

(d) When the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, *his*, *her* are, for the sake of clearness, often rendered *di lui*, *di lei*:

Egli non conósce il di lei cuôre. *He does not know her heart.*

(e) *A . . . of mine, of thine, etc., is un mio, un tuo, etc.:*

Úna nôstra cugína.	<i>A cousin of ours.</i>
--------------------	--------------------------

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

46. Personal pronouns are divided into two classes, conjunctive and disjunctive: the conjunctive forms are those used as direct object of a verb, and as indirect object without a preposition; the disjunctive forms are those used as subject of a verb, and as object of a preposition.

EGLI ve lo dà per ME.
He to you it gives for me.

CONJUNCTIVE FORMS

47. Conjunctive pronouns are *always unaccented*, and cannot be separated from the verb, which they sometimes follow but often precede, as will be explained in **48**.

They are used only as direct object of a verb or as indirect object without a preposition. The forms are:

mi, me, to me.	ti, thee, to thee.
ci, us, to us. ¹	vi, you, to you.
si (reflexive), himself, to himself; herself, to herself; itself, to itself.	
si (reflexive), themselves, to themselves.	
lo, him ¹ ; gli, to him. ²	la, her; le, to her.
li, them (masc.); lóro, to them. ²	le, them (fem.); lóro, to them.

It must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. *It* representing not a word, but a whole clause, is *lo*.³

Mi conóscere.	<i>He knows me.</i>
Ti do i libri.	<i>I give thee the books.</i>
Ci vedéte.	<i>You see us.</i>
Vi dico tutto.	<i>I tell you everything.</i>

¹ In old Italian and in poetry ne is often used for ci, and il for lo.

² In conversation li is often used for gli, and gli or li for lóro.

³ In certain idiomatic phrases la represents an indefinite object: as pagárla cara, to pay dearly for it.

Si veste.	<i>He dresses himself.</i>
Si divertono.	<i>They amuse themselves.</i>
Ècco l'oro: ve lo do.	<i>Here's the gold: I give it to you.</i>
Ècco la palla: la vedo.	<i>Here's the ball: I see it.</i>
Cóme potéva sapére se fo veníva o no? — Lo ha indovináto.	<i>How could he tell whether I was coming or not? He guessed it.</i>

1. It will be seen that the third person (not reflexive) has different forms for the direct and the indirect object.

Lo trovai.	<i>I found him.</i>
Gli feci un regalo.	<i>I made him a present.</i>
La lascia.	<i>He leaves her.</i>
Le scrive.	<i>He writes to her.</i>
Li cercate.	<i>You seek them (masc.).</i>
Le salutate.	<i>You greet them (fem.).</i>
Mandiámo loro mille saluti.	<i>We send them (masc. or fem.) a thousand greetings.</i>

2. The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are *mi*, *ci*; *ti*, *vi*. All plural reflexive pronouns are used also as reciprocal pronouns. A verb is called *reflexive* when it has as *direct* or *indirect* object a *conjunctive* pronoun representing the same person as its subject:

Mi difendo.	<i>I defend myself.</i>
Vi lavate.	<i>You wash yourselves.</i>
Si fa onore.]	<i>She does herself credit.</i>
Si odiano.	<i>They hate each other.</i>
Ci amiámo.	<i>We love one another.</i>

3. Another conjunctive pronoun is *ne*,¹ of *it*, of *them*; it corresponds also to *any*, *some* when these words mean *any*, *some of it*, *any, some of them*. It is often used pleonastically in Italian.

Ne párla.	<i>He speaks of it.</i>
Ne ho.	<i>I have some.</i>
Non ne abbiámo.	<i>We haven't any.</i>
Ne voléte?	<i>Do you want any?</i>
Tu ne approfitti di questa libertà.	<i>You make good use of this liberty.</i>

¹ Cf. French *en*.

(a) *Vi, you*, and *ci* and *ne, us*, are not distinguished by form nor position from the adverbs *vi*, *ci*, meaning *there, here, to it, to them*,¹ and the adverb *ne, thence* (see 84):²

Ci vádo.

I go there.

Vi è státo.

He has been there.

Ne vêngono.

They come from there.

The adverb *ci* or *vi* is used to express *to it, to them*, in speaking of *things*.

Ci pênsérò.

I shall attend to it.

Mi fa déi gêsti, ma non
vi rispôndo.

*He makes signs to me, but I do not
reply to them.*

48. The conjunctive pronouns, except *lóro*, immediately precede the verb:

Mi vedéte.

You see me.

Non lo capisco.

I don't understand him.

But when the verb is an infinitive,³ a positive imperative,⁴ a present participle, or a past participle used without an auxiliary, the pronoun follows the verb, and is written as one word with it:⁵

per vedérlo, *to see him.*

di avérlo vedútō, *to have seen him.*

vedételī, *see them.*

vedêndoci, *seeing us.*

avêndoci vedútō, *having seen us.*

vedútoti, *having seen thee.*

The addition of the pronoun does not change the place of the accent.

Lóro always follows the verb, but is never united to it.

Égli dà lóro del víno,

He gives them some wine.

Parlátē lóro.

Speak to them.

¹ Cf. French *y*.

² Cf. French *en*.

³ Not the infinitive used — with a negative — as imperative (see 73): *as non lo fâre, do not do it* (second pers. sing.).

⁴ Not the negative imperative, nor the subjunctive used imperatively (see 77, a): *as non li guardâte, do not look at them; si régoli, let him moderate himself* (third pers. sing. pres. subj.).

⁵ Students should follow strictly all of these rules; but they will find that the first is, in certain cases, not always observed by good Italian writers. In literary style a pronoun often follows a verb that begins a sentence: *as védolo venire, I see him coming.*

(a) When an infinitive depends immediately (without an intervening preposition) on another verb, a conjunctive pronoun belonging to the infinitive may go with either verb:

Pôsso vedérti or ti pôsso *I can see thee.*
vedére.

(NEVER: pôsso ti vedére)

A reflexive pronoun oftenest goes with the main verb.

Si dêve corrèggere. *He must correct himself.*

If both verbs have objects, the main verb regularly takes all conjunctive pronouns:

Ve lo sânto dire.
Me lo fa capire.

I hear you say it.
He makes me understand it.

If, however, the main verb is impersonal, it cannot take the object of the infinitive:

Bisogna fárlo.

It is necessary to do it.

If the main verb is **fâre**, **lasciare**, **sentire**, **udire**, or **vedere**, it must take the pronoun:

Lo fa chiamâre.

He has him called.

(b) If the main verb is **fâre**, and the dependent infinitive has a direct object, the object of **fâre**, if it has one, must be indirect:

Le fa avére la lèttera.
Fâtelì vedére a quel signôre.
Dovrèi fârglielo accettâre.

He lets her have the letter.
Let that gentleman see them.
I ought to make him accept it.

This construction is generally used also with **lasciare**, *to let*, and often with **sentire** and **udire**, *to hear*, and **vedere**, *to see*. Note that the main verb takes all conjunctive pronouns.

Gliélo védo dâre.

I see it given him.

(c) When a conjunctive pronoun is joined to an infinitive, that infinitive drops its final **e**; if it ends in **-rre**, it drops **-re**:

fârlo (**fâre**), *to do it.*

condúrvi (condúrre), *to conduct you.*

(d) The final vowel of *mi*, *ti*, *si* is often, and that of *lo*, *la* is nearly always elided before a verb beginning with a vowel:

T' amo.

I love thee.

L' ho visto.

I've seen him.

(e) All conjunctive pronouns except *gli* and *glie* (see 50) double their initial consonant when added to any form of a verb that ends in an accented vowel:

Dámmi (*imper. da'* from *dáre*). *Give me.*

Parleròlle (*antique, for le par-* lerð).

I shall speak to her.

Dillo (*imper. di'* from *dire*). *Say it.*

(f) Pronouns are joined to the interjection *ècco*, *see here*, just as they are joined to the imperative of a verb:

Èccomi.

Here I am.

Èccotelo prônto.

Here it is ready for thee.

49. When two conjunctive pronouns come together, the indirect object precedes the direct:

Mi vi presentâ.

He introduces you to me.

Non vuðl presentârvimi.

He will not introduce me to you.

Gli si presentð un uðmo.

A man presented himself to him.

But see 55, end.

Lóro, however, always comes last:

Presentâtela lóro.

Introduce her to them.

Ne follows all forms except lóro:

Me ne dà.

He gives me some.

Dátene lóro.

Give them some.

50. *Mi*, *ti*, *cí*, *vi*, *si* change their i to e before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne* (pronoun or adverb); and if the two words follow the verb, they are joined together:¹

Me lo díce.

He tells me it.

Ve ne domândo.

I ask you for some.

Mandâtecelo.

Send it to us.

¹ In poetry *me lo*, *me ne*, etc., often become *mel*, *men*, etc.: as *teí dico*, *I tell thee so*; *sen tórnâ*, *he returns thence*. *Non lo* often = *nol*.

Gli and le (*to her*) become glie before lo, la, li, le, ne, and unite with them:

Gliéli mándo.
Vóglia dárglielo.

I send them to him, to her.
I wish to give it to him, to her.

DISJUNCTIVE FORMS

51. These forms are so called because they do not necessarily stand next to the verb.

Disjunctive pronouns have two cases, nominative and objective (or accusative). The objective case is used only after prepositions (for exceptions, see 51, a, b).

The disjunctive forms are these:

fo, <i>I; me, me.</i>	tu, <i>thou; te, thee.</i>
nói, <i>we; nōi, us.</i>	vói, <i>you; vói, you.</i>
{ égli, lói, ésso, <i>he; lói, ésso, him.</i>	
{ élla, léi, éssa, <i>she; léi, éssa, her.</i>	
{ éssi, lóro, <i>they (masc.); lóro, éssi, them (masc.).</i>	
{ ésse, lóro, <i>they (fem.); lóro, ésse, them (fem.).</i>	

It must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. *It* as subject of an impersonal verb is regularly not expressed (see, however, 51, h).

La cásá è grandíssima, e in-	<i>The house is very large, and around</i>
tórno ad éssa c' è un giar-	<i>it there is a garden.</i>
dino.	
Non è véro.	<i>It isn't true.</i>
Piôve.	<i>It rains.</i>

1. The various pronouns of the third person are used as follows:

In speaking of *things* the different forms of ésso are generally employed.

In speaking of *persons* égli (or ésso), élla (or éssa), pl. éssi, ésse, are used for the nominative in written Italian,¹ but in the spoken

¹ Italian formerly possessed also masc. égílino, fem. éllenó, *they*, for persons; likewise pl. égli (or éi) and élle.

language they are replaced by *lui*, *lei*, *loro*. For the objective, *lui*, *lei*, *loro* (sometimes *esso*, *essa*, *essi*, *esse*) are used both in conversation and in writing.

For *he who*, etc., see 42, b.

Quéste cóse sóno vére anch' ésse. *These things are true, too.*

Ella párla con lóro.

She speaks with them.

Léi è giovane ma lui è vécchio.

She is young, but he is old.

Vénnero da nós anch' éssi.

They came to us, too.

2. As the Italian verb denotes by its endings the person and number of its subject, the personal pronouns of the nominative case are generally omitted. When expressed (for clearness, emphasis, or euphony), they may precede or follow the verb; in dependent clauses they nearly always follow. The subject of an interrogative verb usually comes after it, as in English.

Parliámo di lui.

We speak of him.

Non vádo.

I don't go.

S' fo fóssi ricco cóme è égli.

If I were rich as he is.

Vénongo éssi?

Are they coming?

3. The disjunctive reflexive pronoun of the third person is *sè*, which is masculine and feminine, singular and plural.

Lo féceró da sè.

They did it by themselves.

In the other persons *me*, *nói*, *te*, *vói* are used.

(a) Use the objective case and not, as in English, the nominative:

(1) When a pronoun of the third person may be regarded as the subject of an unexpressed verb:

Beáto lui!

Happy he!

*Tánto i genitóri che lui sóno
ricchi.*

His parents as well as he are rich.

(2) When the pronoun stands in the predicate after the verb *essere*:

Credéndo ch' fo fóssi te.

Thinking I was you.

But note carefully that *it is I*, etc., are *sóno fo*, *séi tu*, *è lui*, *è lei*, *siámo nós*, *siéte vóis*, *sóno lóro*.

(b) (1) When the pronoun is at all emphatic, the *disjunctive* form *must* be used. In this case the conjunctive form is often inserted also.

Párlo a vóli signóre.
Mi piáce ánche a me.

I speak to you, sir.
It pleases me too.

BUT

Vi párlo.
Mi piáce.

I speak to you.
It pleases me.

(2) The disjunctive form must therefore *always* be used when the verb has two direct or two indirect objects.

Védo l'íi e l'éi.
Lo do a mío pádre e a te.

I see him and her.
I give it to my father and to thee.

(c) In speaking of a company, a class, or a people nói áltrei, vóli áltrei (which are also written as one word) are used for nói, vóli.

Nói áltrei italiáni.
Vóli áltrei pittóri.

We Italians.
You painters.

(d) *With me, with thee, with himself, herself, themselves* are either *con me*, etc., or *méco, téco, séco*.

(e) *Myself, thyself, etc.*, used for emphasis with a pronoun or noun, are rendered by the adjective *stéssso*.

Nói stéssi la vedémmo. *We saw her ourselves.*

(f) *One another, each other* is *l' un l' áltro*.

Ci amiámo l' un l' áltro. *We love one another.*

(g) In Florence élla is often shortened into *la* (plural *le*), which is used of both persons and things. In poetry égli becomes *éi*.

La non viéne.

She doesn't come.

Páre che la si pôssa tenér in
máno.

*It looks as if it might be held in the
hand.*

Éi tâce.

He is silent.

(h) In impersonal phrases like *it is* the subject, *it*, is occasionally expressed in Italian; it is then translated *égli*, which in the spoken language is shortened into *gli*.

Gli è che.

It is because.

52. 1. The usual form of address in Italy is **Élla**¹ (or *ella*), objective **Lêi** (or *lèi*); in conversation **Élla** is replaced by **Lêi** (or *lèi*). This word really means *it*, and takes the verb in the third person; but an adjective or past participle modifying it agrees in gender with the person it represents.

The plural of **Élla** is **Lóro** (or *lóro*), which takes the verb in the third person plural.

The use of the capital initial in all these words is optional. It marks respect, and is sometimes useful to distinguish *you* from *she*.

Lêi or **Élla** è tedéscò, signòre. *You are German, sir.*

Signorina Néri, **Lêi** or **Élla** fu lasciàta sóla.

Sóno lièto che **La** stia bène (see 51, g).

E **Lóro**, dóve vánno? *And you, where are you going?*

Lóro éranò già partiti.

Signorfne, **lóro** sóno móltò studiòse. *Young ladies, you are very studious.*

Like other personal pronouns, **Élla** and **Lóro** are very often omitted in the nominative.

Lêi è tróppo gentile or è tróppo gentile.

Cóme stánno? *How do you (pl.) do?*

The conjunctive forms of **Élla** are **La**, **Le** (or *la*, *le*), those of **Lóro** are **Li**, **Le**, **Lóro** (or *li*, *le*, *lóro*); they occupy the same positions and undergo the same modifications as the corresponding pronouns of the third person (see 48, 49, 50).

Note that regularly in the singular the same pronoun is used, whether one is addressing a man or a woman; although occasionally *lo*, *gli* are substituted for *la*, *le* in speaking to a

¹ Standing for *Vôstra Signoria*, *your lordship*, or *ladyship*, or some other title of the feminine gender.

male. In the *plural*, however, if the pronoun be a direct object, the sexes are regularly distinguished.

The reflexive pronoun of **Élla** and **Lóro** is **si**.

Le prométtó di visitárla.	<i>I promise (you) to visit you.</i>
Gliélo do.	<i>I give it to you.</i>
La prégó d' accomodársi.	<i>I beg you to seat yourself.</i>
Vídi Léi e il bábbo.	<i>I saw you and your father (see 51, b, 2).</i>
Dico lóro.	<i>I tell you (pl.).</i>
Le cercáva.	<i>I was looking for you (fem. pl.).</i>
Non pôsso vedérli.	<i>I can't see you (masc. pl.).</i>
Si divértono, signoríni?	<i>Are you enjoying yourselves, young gentlemen?</i>

The possessive of **Élla** is **Súa** (or **súo**); that of **Lóro** is **Lóro** (or **lóro**). See 45.

La **Súa** gradita léttera. *Your welcome letter.*

2. **Vói** is the form of address oftenest found in books; it is used sometimes in conversation also, but only toward inferiors or toward equals with whom one is on familiar terms.¹ It is employed for both plural and singular (like English *you*), although its verb is always plural; an adjective or participle modifying it agrees in gender and number with the person or persons it represents.

Vói qui, Piétre?	<i>You here, Peter?</i>
Vói siéte álti tútti e dóue.	<i>You are tall, both of you.</i>

3. In speaking to an intimate friend, a near relative, a child, or an animal, the only form of address is **tu**. **Tu** is used also, like English *thou*, in poetry and poetic prose. The plural of **tu** is **vói**.

Ti chíámo Enríco.	<i>I call you Henry.</i>
Dóve séi tu?	<i>Where art thou?</i>
Vôglia vedérvi, figliuòli miéi.	<i>My children, I wish to see you.</i>

¹ Though advocated by some of the best writers and speakers of Italian, the use of **vói** instead of **Léi** and **Lóro** has not become general. In Southern Italy, however, **vói** is the form popularly used.

AUXILIARY VERBS

53. The irregular verbs *essere*, *to be*, and *avére*, *to have*, are the ones most used as auxiliaries in Italian. They are conjugated as follows:

(a) **INFINITIVES:** *essere*, *to be*; *essere státo*, *to have been*.

PARTICIPLES: *esséndo*, *being*; *esséndo státo*, *having been*; *státo*, *been*.

INDICATIVE

PRESENT <i>I am, etc.</i>	PAST DESCRIPTIVE <i>I was, etc.</i>	PAST ABSOLUTE <i>I was, etc.</i>	FUTURE <i>I shall be, etc.</i>
sóno	éra	fui	sarò
séi	éri	fostí	sarai
d	éra	fu	sarà
siámo	eravámo	fummo	sarémo
siéte	eraváte	foste	saréte
sóno	érano	fúrono	saránno
PRESENT PERFECT <i>I have been, etc.</i>	PAST PERFECT <i>I had been, etc.</i>	SECOND PAST PERFECT <i>I had been, etc.</i>	FUTURE PERFECT <i>I shall have been, etc.</i>
sóno státo (státa) etc.	éra státo (státa) etc.	fui státo (státa) etc.	sarò státo (státa) etc.
siámo státi (státe) etc.	eravámo státi (státe) etc.	fummo státi (státe) etc.	sarémo státi (státe) etc.

IMPERATIVE <i>Be, etc.</i>	SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT <i>I be, etc.</i>	PAST <i>I were, etc.</i>	PAST FUTURE <i>I should be, etc.</i>
sí or sía	sí	fossi	saréi
siámo	síamo	fossimo	sarémmo
siáte	siáte	foste	saréste
	siano or sieno	fossero	sarébbero

SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
PRESENT	PAST	PERFECT
PERFECT	PERFECT	<i>I should have</i>
<i>I have been, etc.</i>	<i>I had been, etc.</i>	<i>been, etc.</i>
sia státo (státa)	fóssi státo (státa)	saréi státo (státa)
etc.	etc.	etc.

(b) INFINITIVES: *avére, to have; avére avúto, to have had.*
 PARTICIPLES: *avêndo, having; avêndo avúto, having had; avúto, had.*

INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT
<i>I have, etc.</i>	<i>I had, etc.</i>	<i>I had, etc.</i>	<i>I shall have, etc.</i>
hô	avéva	èbbi	avrò
hái	avévi	avéstí	avrái
ha	avéva	èbbe	avrà
abbiámo	avévamo	avémmo	avrémo
avéte	avévate	avéste	avréte
hánno	avévano	èbbero	avránno
PRESENT	PAST	SECOND PAST	FUTURE
PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT
<i>I have had, etc.</i>	<i>I had had, etc.</i>	<i>I had had, etc.</i>	<i>I shall have had, etc.</i>
ho avúto	avéva avúto	èbbi avúto	avrò avúto
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE	PAST FUTURE
Have, etc.	PRESENT	PAST
	<i>I have, etc.</i>	<i>I had, etc.</i>
ábbi	ábbia	avéssi
abbi	ábbi or ábbia	avéssi
	ábbia	avéssse
abbiámo	abbiámo	avéssimo
abbiáte	abbiáte	avéste
	ábbiano	avéssero
PRESENT	PAST	PAST FUTURE
PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT
<i>I have had, etc.</i>	<i>I had had, etc.</i>	<i>I should have had, etc.</i>
ábbia avúto	avéssi avúto	avréi avúto
etc.	etc.	etc.

54. 1. The auxiliary of the passive is **èssere**, *to be*.

L'esercito fu sconfitto. *The army was defeated.*

2. The future (*shall*, *will*) and the past future or conditional (*should*, *would*) are formed in Italian without any auxiliary.

Io andrò ed egli verrà.
Vorréi vedérlo.

I shall go, and he will come.
I should like to see him.

3. The auxiliary of the perfect, past perfect, second past perfect, and future perfect tenses is **avére**, *to have*, if the verb be active and transitive.

If the verb be passive, reflexive, or reciprocal, the auxiliary is always **èssere**. For the definition of a reflexive verb, see **47, 2**, on p. 36.

If the verb be intransitive, the auxiliary is generally **èssere**, but sometimes **avére**.¹

Ho parlato.
Avévanó fatto quéste cose.
Mi sóno fátto mále.
Le dónne si éranó sbagliáte.
Sarò venúto.
È nevicáto.
Avéva viaggiáto.

I have spoken.
They had done these things.
I have hurt myself.
The women had made a mistake.
I shall have come.
It has snowed.
He had traveled.

(a) A past participle used with the auxiliary **èssere** must agree with its *subject* in gender and number.

La ragázza è tornáta. *The girl has returned.*
Le dónne si sóno disputáte. *The women have disputed.*

But when the verb has a reflexive pronoun as *indirect object*, and some other word as *direct object*, the past participle may agree with the subject, or with the direct object, or remain invariable.

La sorélla si è fáitta mále. *Our sister has hurt herself.*
Ci siámo fátti onóre. *We have done ourselves credit.*
Ci siámo dáta (or dátó) paróla d'onóre. *We have pledged our word of honor.*

¹ The use of **avére** with intransitive verbs must be learned by practice.

(b) A past participle used with **avére** may or may not agree with its *direct object*, according to the choice of the writer. It usually does not agree when the object follows; and it nearly always does agree when the object is a personal pronoun preceding the verb.

La bírra che avéva bevító (or
bevítá). *The beer he had drunk.*

Ho vedútó mólté cõse. *I have seen many things.*
Li ho trováti. *I have found them.*

(c) *To be*, expressing a state or condition, is often rendered by **stáre** (92, 4), instead of **éssere**. **Stáre per** or **éssere per** (followed by the infinitive) means *to be on the point of*.

Sto bêne. *I'm well.*
Cóme sta? *How are you?*
Stáva per uscire. *I was just going out.*

(d) English *am* (or *was*) + the present participle, when expressing duration, is rendered either by the simple present (or past descriptive) or by the same tense of **stáre**¹ + the present participle; when denoting futurity, it is translated by the future (or past future), sometimes by the present (or past descriptive).

Cammináva.	<i>He was walking.</i>
Státe lavorándo.	<i>You are working.</i>
Leggévanó or stávano leggêndo.	<i>They were reading.</i>
Médito or sto meditándo.	<i>I am meditating.</i>
Dice che verrà (or viéne).	<i>He says he is coming.</i>
Disse che verrébbe.	<i>He said he was coming.</i>

(e) A verb with the auxiliary *used to* (or *would* = *used to*) is translated either by the simple past descriptive, or by the infinitive with **solére**, *to be accustomed* (92, 14).

Vi andáva (or soléva andáre) *He used to go (or would go) there every evening.*

(f) **Venire**, *to come* (92, 166), and **rimanére**, *to remain* (92, 16), are sometimes used as auxiliaries in the simple tenses of the passive,

¹ **Andáre** (92, 1) and **venire** (92, 166) are sometimes used instead of **stáre**.

instead of **essere**. **Andáre**, *to go* (92, 1), is similarly used, but always implying duty or obligation.

I lâdri vénnero arrestâti.	<i>The thieves were arrested.</i>
Rimâse sorprâsa.	<i>She was surprised.</i>
Il fucile non va toccâto.	<i>The gun mustn't be touched.</i>

(g) The English auxiliary *do* is not expressed in Italian.

Non viène.	<i>He does not come.</i>
------------	--------------------------

(h) *To have a thing done* is far *fâre* *tâna côsa* (92, 2).

Il re lo féce ammazzâre.	<i>The king had him killed.</i>
--------------------------	---------------------------------

55. The third person of the passive is very often replaced by the reflexive construction with *si*:

Si raccónta.	<i>It is related.</i>
Quésto libro si lègge.	<i>This book is read.</i>
La spâda che mi si diède.	<i>The sword that was given me.</i>
Quelle côse si facévano.	<i>Those things were done.</i>

Many writers always make the verb agree with its subject in number; but in popular speech the verb is nearly always in the singular when its subject follows (as if *si* were the subject of the verb, and the original subject were the object):

Si vêdono (or vêde) moltîs-	<i>Many things are seen.</i>
sime côse.	
Non si può (or pôssono) lèg-	<i>These books can't be read.</i>
gere quéstì libri.	

Si belonging to a dependent infinitive regularly goes with the main verb (see 48, a).

The construction with *si* is generally used also to render the English indefinite *they* followed by a verb: as *si díce*, *they say*. In this sense it is employed with neuter as well as with transitive verbs: as *si va spésso*, *people often go*. See also 63, a. In this construction an object pronoun may precede *si*: as *lo si fa*, *it is done*.

56. Following are synopses of the compound tenses of transitive, neuter, reflexive, and passive verbs. In the paradigms given henceforth these forms will be omitted.

(a) Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *trovare*, *to find*, and *venire*, *to come*:

<i>avére trováto, to have found.</i>	<i>éssere venúto, to have come.</i>
<i>avéndo trováto, having found.</i>	<i>esséndo venúto, having come.</i>
<i>ho trováto, I have found.</i>	<i>sóno venúto, I have come.</i>
<i>avéva trováto, I had found.</i>	<i>éra venúto, I had come.</i>
<i>ébbi trováto, I had found.</i>	<i>fúi venúto, I had come.</i>
<i>avrò trováto, I shall have found.</i>	<i>sárò venúto, I shall have come.</i>
<i>avréi trováto, I should have found.</i>	<i>saréi venúto, I should have come.</i>
<i>ábbia trováto, I have found.</i>	<i>sía venúto, I have come.</i>
<i>avéssi trováto, I had found.</i>	<i>fóssi venúto, I had come.</i>

(b) Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *alzarsi*, (*to raise one's self*), *to get up*, and *andársene*,¹ *to go away*.

INFINITIVE: PAST	éssersi alzáto	éssersene andáto
PARTICIPLE: PAST	esséndosi alzáto	esséndosene andáto
INDICATIVE: PRES. PERF.	mi sóno alzáto	me ne sóno andáto
PAST PERFECT	mi éra alzáto	me ne éra andáto
SECOND PAST PERFECT	mi fúi alzáto	me ne fúi andáto
FUTURE PERFECT	mi sárò alzáto	me ne sárò andáto
PAST FUTURE: PERFECT	mi saréi alzáto	me ne saréi andáto
SUBJUNCTIVE: PRES. PERF.	mi sía alzáto	me ne sía andáto
PAST PERFECT	mi fóssi alzáto	me ne fóssi andáto

(c) Following is a synopsis of the entire passive of *amare*, *to love*:

INFINITIVE: PRESENT	éssere amáto, to be loved.
PAST	éssere státo amáto, to have been loved.
PARTICIPLE: PRESENT	esséndo amáto, being loved.
PAST	esséndo státo amáto, having been loved.
INDICATIVE: PRESENT	sóno amáto, I am loved.
PRESENT PERFECT	sóno státo amáto, I have been loved.
PAST DESCRIPTIVE	éra amáto, I was loved.
PAST PERFECT	éra státo amáto, I had been loved.
PAST ABSOLUTE	fúi amáto, I was loved.
SECOND PAST PERFECT	fúi státo amáto, I had been loved.

¹ *Andársene* is composed of the verb *andáre*, *to go*, the reflexive *si*, and the adverb *ne, thence* (see 47, a).

FUTURE	sarò amáto, <i>I shall be loved.</i>
FUTURE PERFECT	sarò státo amáto, <i>I shall have been loved.</i>
PAST FUTURE	saréi amáto, <i>I should be loved.</i>
PERFECT	saréi státo amáto, <i>I should have been loved.</i>
IMPERATIVE	sí amáto, <i>be loved.</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE: PRESENT	síamáto, <i>I be loved.</i>
PRESENT PERFECT	síastáto amáto, <i>I have been loved.</i>
PAST	fóssi amáto, <i>I were loved.</i>
PAST PERFECT	fóssi státo amáto, <i>I had been loved.</i>

57. *May, might, can, could* are generally rendered by the proper tense of *potére*¹; *must, ought, shall=must, should=ought*, by *dovére*¹; *will* and *would* expressing volition, by *volére*.¹

Può èssere véro.	<i>It may be true.</i>
Non potéva parláre.	<i>He couldn't speak.</i>
Déve pagárlo.	<i>He must pay him, he shall pay him.</i>
Dovrébbe fárlo.	<i>He ought to do it, he should do it.</i>
Vóglia sapérre.	<i>I will know.</i>
Non vorrà andáre.	<i>I wouldn't go.</i>

Note that *ought* must be expressed by the *past future* (or *conditional*) of *dovére*.

Dovrémmo parláre.	<i>We ought to speak.</i>
Avrà dovuto fárlo.	<i>I ought to have done it.</i>

No preposition intervenes between these verbs and the dependent infinitive.

Hánno potúto dormíre.	<i>They have been able to sleep.</i>
Potrémo partíre.	<i>We shall be able to start.</i>
Dovémmo veniré.	<i>We had to come.</i>
Dovréte trovárla.	<i>You will have to find her.</i>
Vorrà tornáre.	<i>He will want to return.</i>
Vorrà sapérre.	<i>I should like to know.</i>

These verbs are not defective, like the English modal auxiliaries; hence in Italian the tense is expressed by the

¹ See 22, 21, 8, 19. The auxiliary of these verbs is regularly *avére*; but some writers use with them the auxiliary that belongs to the dependent infinitive: as *hánno potúto veniré* or *sóno potúti veniré*, *they have been able to come*.

auxiliary itself, and not by the dependent infinitive. To find the proper form of **potére**, **dovére**, or **volére**, replace *may*, etc., by the correct tense of *to be able*; *must*, etc., by *to be obliged*; *will*, etc., by *to want* or *to like*: as *I could have said it=I should have* (**avrêi**) *been able* (**potúto**) *to say it* (**dírlo**)=**avrêi potúto dírlo.**

Avrêbbe dovúto tacére.

He ought to have kept still.

Avrémmo volúto restáre.

We would have stayed.

(a) *Must* is also expressed by the impersonal verb **bisognâre**, *to be necessary*, followed by the infinitive or by **che**, *that*, with the subjunctive. *To have to* is **avrê da**.

Bisórgna fárlo.

It must be done.

Bisórgna che andiámo.

We must go.

Ho da scrívere úna lêttera.

I have to write a letter.

(b) *To be able* meaning *to know how* is **sapére** (see 92, 6). *Not to be able to help* doing a thing is **non potér a méno di non** (with infinitive) or **non potér fâre a méno di** (with infinitive).

Non sêppe fárlo.

He couldn't do it.

Sa lèggere e scrívere.

He can read and write.

Non potè a méno di non ridere.

He couldn't help laughing.

REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS

58. Italian verbs are divided into four conjugations, according as the infinitive ending is **-âre**, accented **-ére**, unaccented **-ere** (or **-rre**), or **-îre**. Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations are, however, inflected just alike.

(a) The final **e** of the infinitive may be dropped before any word except one beginning with **s** impure.¹

¹ Cf. 10, b; 14, b. Italians find it hard to pronounce three consecutive consonants of which the middle one is **s**.

THE REGULAR VERB

59. Parlare, to speak, will serve as a model for the first conjugation. All compound tenses are omitted (see 56):

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

	parlare	parlando	parlato
INDICATIVE			
PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
páro	parláva	parlái	parlerò
párlí	parlávi	parlásti	parlerái
pária	parláva	parlò	parlerà
parliámo	parlavámo	parlámmo	parlerémo
parláte	parlaváte	parláste	parleréte
párlano	parlávano	parláróno	parleránno
IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
	PRESENT	PAST	
párla	párlí	parlássi	parleréi
	párlí	parlássi	parleréstí
	párlí	parlásse	parlerébbe
parliámo	parliámo	parlássimo	parlerémmo
parláte	parláte	parláste	parleréste
	párlino	parlássero	parlerébbero

(a) Verbs whose infinitives end in -care or -gare insert h after the c or g in all forms where those letters precede e or i:

Pághi (pagáre).

Let him pay.

Cercherò (cercare).

I shall search.

Verbs in -ciare and -giare drop the i before e or i:

Mangi (mangiare).

Thou eatest.

Comincerà¹ (cominciare).

He will begin.

But all other verbs in -jare drop the i only before another i:

Picchi (picchiare).

Let him strike.

Pigli (pigliare).

Thou takest.

BUT

Picchierà, piglierà.

He will strike, I should take.

¹ Some writers retain the i before e: as comincierà.

(b) The verbs **giocare**, **rotare**, **sonare** generally change o of the stem into uo in all forms where that vowel is accented:

Suōni.

Giūōcano.

Let him play.

They play.

Rinnovāre and tonāre may make the same change. The u is sometimes used throughout.

60. Verbs of the second and third conjugations¹ are inflected like **crédere**, *to believe*:

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

crédere	credēndo	credūto
---------	----------	---------

INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
crédo	credéva	credéi (credétti)	crederò
crédi	credévi	credésti	crederai
créde	credéva	credè (credétte)	crederà
crediámo	credevámo	credémmo	crederémo
credéte	credeváte	credéste	crederéte
crédono	credévano	credérono (credéttoro)	crederánno

IMPERATIVE

SUBJUNCTIVE

PAST FUTURE

	PRESENT	PAST	
crédi	créda	credéssi	crederéi
	créda	credéssi	crederéstti
	créda	credéssse	crederébbbe
crediámo	crediámo	credéssimo	crederémmo
credéte	crediáte	credéste	crederéste
	crédano	credéssero	crederébbero

The following verbs and their compounds do not have in the past absolute the forms in parentheses:

bátttere	méscere	stridere
compétere	miétere	téssere
convérgere	pásdere	tóndere
divérgere	prúdere	
lúcere	ripétere	

¹ Many grammars and dictionaries class these two together as the "second conjugation."

Verbs in **-cere** and **-gere** insert after the **c** or **g** an **i** before the **u** of the past participle, but not before the **o** or **a** of the singular or third person plural of the present indicative or subjunctive:

méscere; mésco, méscl, mésce, mescíamo, mescéte, méscono; mésca, etc., mescano; mesciúto.

61. Most verbs of the fourth conjugation¹ are inflected like **finire**, *to finish*:

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES			
	finire	finendo	finito
INDICATIVE			
PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
finisco	finíva	finfi	finirò
finisci	finívi	finistí	finirái
finisce	finíva	finí	finirà
finíamo	finivámo	finímmo	finirémo
finíte	finiváte	finiste	finiréte
finíscono	finivano	finirono	finiránno
IMPERATIVE			
	SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
	PRESENT	PAST	
	finísca	finissi	finiréi
finisci	finísca	finissi	finirésti
	finísca	finisse	finirébbe
finíamo	finíamo	finíssimo	finirémmo
finíte	finíte	finiste	finiréste
	finiscano	finissero	finirébbero

Though inflected like **finire** in all other parts, **dormire**, **fuggire**,² **pentire**, **sentire**, **servire**, **vestire** are always, **aborrire**, **bollire**, and verbs in **-vertire** are generally, and **assorbire**, **inghiottire**, **mentire**, **nutrire**, **tossire** are often, in the present indicative, imperative, and subjunctive, conjugated

¹ Many grammars and dictionaries call this the "third conjugation."

² **Fuggire** inserts no extra **i** (see last sentence of 60).

after the model below. **Partire** and **sortire** are, when transitive, inflected like **finire**, when intransitive, like **sentire**.¹

INDICATIVE	IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE
sénto		sénta
sénti	sénti	sénta
sénte		sénta
sentiámo	sentiámo	sentiámo
sentite	sentite	sentiáte
séntono		séntano

62. The present participle of all verbs is invariable.

Stavámo parlándo.

We were speaking.

63. In all conjugations a form of the first person singular of the past descriptive ending in **-o** instead of **-a** is nearly always used in conversation, and occurs often in the works of modern authors:

Leggévo.

I was reading.

(a) In popular speech the first person plural of all tenses is generally replaced by the third person singular preceded by **si**:

Nói áltre si crede.

We believe.

Nói si êra venúti.

We had come.

Ci si decise.

We decided (ourselves).

(b) Final **o** of the third person plural is frequently omitted:

Párlan di líui.

They speak of him.

Forms in **-anno** sometimes drop **-no**:

Dirán tutto.

They will tell everything.

(c) The past descriptive endings **-avámo**, **-aváte**, **-evámo**, **-eváte**, **-ivámo**, **-iváte** are often pronounced **-ávamo**, **-ávate**, etc.

(d) Occasionally, especially in poetry, **-at-** is omitted from the ending of the past participle of the first conjugation: destáto = désto.

¹ Compounds are conjugated like their simple verbs.

THE IRREGULAR VERB

64. Certain parts of Italian irregular verbs are always regular: the example given below will show which they are. *Èssere* (see 53, a) is an exception to all rules.

65. Many irregular verbs that belong or once belonged to the third conjugation have the infinitive contracted (*fáre* for *fácere*, *díre* for *dícere*, *condúrre* for *condúcere*): in this case the future and past future are formed from this contracted infinitive (*farò*, *dirò*, *condurrò*), while the present participle, the past descriptive and past subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and past absolute are formed from the uncontracted stem (*facêndo*, *dicéva*, *conduciámo*).

66. *Pôrre* (for *pónere*), *to put*, a verb of the third conjugation, will serve to show which are the regular and which the irregular parts of irregular verbs: the forms printed in boldface are regular in all verbs except *dáre*, *dfre*, *èssere*, *fáre*, *stáre*; those in Roman type may be irregular.

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

pôrre	ponêndo	pôsto
--------------	----------------	--------------

INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
pongo	ponéva	pósi	porrò
póni	ponévi	ponésti ²	porrái
póne	ponéva	póse	porrà
poníamo	ponévâmo	ponémmâmo ²	porrémo
ponéte ¹	ponevâte	ponéste ²	porréte
póngono	ponévanô	pósero	porránnô

¹ See 66, 4.

² See 66, 3.

IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
	PRESENT	PAST	
póni	pónga	ponéssi ¹	porréi
poníamo	pónga	ponéssi	porrésti
ponéte	poníamo	ponésse	porrébbe
	poníate	ponéssimo	porrémmo
	póngano	ponéste	porréste
		ponéssero	porrébbero

It will be seen that the present participle, the past descriptive and past subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and past absolute are always regular.

1. *Dáre* and *stáre* have in the future and past future *dárð*, *daréi*; *starð*, *staréi*. Otherwise the only irregularity in the future and past future is that they are contracted in many verbs even when the infinitive is uncontracted: as *vedére*, *to see*, *vedrá*; *venire*, *to come*, *verréi*.

2. From the first person singular of the past absolute the other irregular persons can be constructed, the third person singular by changing the ending -i to -e, the third person plural by adding -ro to the third person singular.²

3. The *regular* persons of the past absolute and the whole past subjunctive are slightly irregular in *dáre* and *stáre*, which substitute e for a in those forms (*déstí*, *démmo*, *désté*, *déssi*; *stéstí*, *stémmo*, *stésté*, *stéssi*).

4. *Díre* (for *dicere*) and *fáre* (for *fácere*) have *díte* and *fáte* in the second person plural of the present indicative.

(a) Verbs whose stem ends in -l, -n, or -r often drop final e or i in the singular of the present indicative and imperative:

Non vuòl andáre.
Vién qui.

He will not go.
Come here.

See also 63, a, b, c.

¹ See 66, 3.

² This rule applies only to an *irregular* past absolute.

(b) The three forms of the imperative are exactly like the corresponding persons of the present indicative, except in **avére**, **sapére**, and **volére**, where they follow the subjunctive:

ábbi	abbiámo	abbiate
sáppi	sappiámo	sappiate
vôgli	vogliámo	vogliate

and in **andáre**, **dáre**, **díre**, **fáre**, and **stáre**, which have in the singular **va'**, **da'**, **di'**, **fa'**, **sta'**.

(c) The third person plural of the present indicative can always be constructed from the first person singular, from which can be formed also the whole present subjunctive except the first and second persons plural: these can be made from the first person plural of the present indicative.

EXCEPTIONS to this rule are **andáre**, **avére**, **dáre**, **fáre**, **sapére**, and **stáre**, which have in the third person plural of the present indicative **vánno**, **hánno**, **dánno**, **fánno**, **sánno**, **stánno**; while **avére**, **dáre**, **sapére**, and **stáre** have in the present subjunctive **ábbia**, **dia**, **sáppia**, **stia**.

67. With the aid of the above notes any verb except **éssere** can be constructed from the infinitive, the participles (the present participle often being necessary to show the uncontracted form of the infinitive), the present indicative, and the first person singular of the past absolute and future. A list of irregular verbs begins on page 80.

(a) In general, compound verbs not differing in conjugation from their simple verbs will be omitted from this list. All compounds of **dáre** and **fáre** are accented on the same syllable as the simple verbs:

Fa.	<i>He does.</i>	Disfà.	<i>He undoes.</i>
-----	-----------------	--------	-------------------

The compounds of **stáre** demand special mention: **ristáre**, **so-prastáre**, **sottostáre**, **sovraстáre** are inflected like **stáre** (**ristà**, **so-prastètti**, **sottostiano**); **distáre** has no present participle, is regular in the present of all moods (**disto**, etc.), but otherwise is inflected

like **stáre** (*distétti*, etc.); **constáre**, **contrastáre**, **instáre**, **ostáre**, **prestáre**, **restáre**, **sostáre** are regular throughout (*cónsta*, **contrástano**, **instái**, **ostárono**, **presterò**, **réstí**, **sostássi**).

68. In old Italian and in poetry both regular and irregular verbs differ in many ways from the normal types: some of the commonest variations are given below.

(a) In the first and third persons singular and the third person plural of the past descriptive **v** is often dropped, but never in the first conjugation: **voléva**=**voléa** (also **volía**); **finfvano**=**finfiano**. Some of these forms are not uncommon in modern prose.

(b) The past future endings **-éi**, **-ébbe**, **-ébbero** are generally replaced in poetry by **-ía**, **-íá**, **-íano**: **crederéi**=**credería**.

(c) The future endings **-ò**, **-ánnō** are sometimes replaced by **-ággio** or **-ábbō**, **-ággiorno** or **-ábbonō**: **amerò**=**amerággio**; **ameránno**=**amerábbono**.

(d) In the third person plural of the past absolute **-no** or **-ono** is often dropped: **amárono**=**amáro** or **amár** (also **amórno**, **amónno**). In the third person singular we find **amáo**, **credéo**, **sentío**.

(e) Final **-ero** is often replaced by **-ono**: **avrébbero**=**avrébbono**.

(f) In the first person plural final **o** is often dropped, and then the **m** sometimes becomes **n**: **andiámo**=**andiám** or **andián**.

(g) In the first person plural of the present indicative of the second and third conjugations **-iámo** may be replaced by **-émo**.

(h) Final **-íano**, wherever it occurs (also **-éano** in the imperfect), may be replaced by **-íeno** or **-íêno**: **avévano**=**aviêno**.

(i) At the end of a word we often find **e** for **i**, sometimes **i** for **e**: **pênsi**=**pêñse**; **ascoltátē**=**ascoltáti**.

(j) **E** is sometimes added to a word ending in an accented vowel: **amò**=**amôe**.

MOODS AND TENSES

69. The English gerund in *-ing* used as subject, predicate nominative, or direct object of a verb must be rendered in Italian by the *infinitive*, nearly always preceded by the definite article.

Mi piace il viaggiare.	<i>I like traveling.</i>
Rifàrsela cògli animáli è da sciòcchi.	<i>Taking vengeance on animals is folly.</i>
'La nôstra prima cura fu il cercare úna pensione.	<i>Our first care was hunting up a boarding house.</i>
Odio lo studiare.	<i>I hate studying.</i>

70. The English gerund preceded by a preposition is translated as follows:

1. If the preposition is a necessary part of the thought, it is expressed in Italian, and the English gerund is rendered by the infinitive with the definite article. This article is, however, omitted (unless it would be used in English) after the following prepositions:

di, of.	invéce di, instead of.	sénza, without.
dópo di, after.	príma di, before.	

Oltre il fâre scarabocchi scrive male. *Besides making blots he writes badly.*

Parlái cóntra il trárre útile di quél-la disgrázia. *I spoke against utilizing that misfortune.*

Il vízio di fumâre. *The habit of smoking.*
Ho l' abítúdine di coricármì tardì. *I am in the habit of going to bed late.*

Invéce di dírmi tutto. *Instead of telling me everything.*
Príma di morire. *Before dying.*
Parlámo sénza rifléttere. *We speak without thinking.*

2. If in English the omission of the preposition, although it made the construction awkward, would not essentially change the

meaning, the phrase is rendered in Italian by the present participle without any preposition.

Studiándo si impára.

(Through) studying we learn.

Dovrélí corríspóndere álla súa
cortesía ascoltándola.

I ought to acknowledge her courtesy
(by) listening to her.

Parténdo incontrò un amico.

(On) going away he met a friend.

Copíando non fa erróri.

(In) copying he makes no mistakes.

3. *To amuse one's self by . . . and to weary one's self by . . .* are divertírsi a . . . and affannársi a . . . with the infinitive:

Si divérte a tirár sássi.

He amuses himself throwing stones.

Some other verbs often take this construction.

71. Following are some other rules for the use of the infinitive and participles:

(a) When any verb is used as an auxiliary, the mood and tense are expressed in that verb, and not in the dependent infinitive (see 57).

Avréi potúto fárlo.

I could have done it.

(b) After *fáre*, *to make* or *to have* (= *to cause*), *sentíre* and *udíre*, *to hear*, and *vedére*, *to see*, the Italian present infinitive is used to render an English past participle. After *lasciare*, *to let*, and often after the preposition *da* an Italian active infinitive is used to translate a passive one in English.

Si fa capíre.

He makes himself understood.

Farò fáre un páio di scárpe.

I shall have a pair of shoes made.

L' ho sentito díre.

I have heard it said.

Lo víde ammazzáre.

He saw him killed.

Si láscia ingannáre.

He lets himself be deceived.

Non c' è niénte da fáre.

There is nothing to be done.

(c) The Italian past participle is inflected like any other adjective. The present participle (which was originally an ablative gerund) is invariable.

When in English the present participle is used adjectively, without any verbal force whatsoever, it is translated, not by the

form we have called the participle, but by a verbal adjective, which can be formed from almost any Italian verb by changing the infinitive ending into *-ânte* for the first conjugation, and into *-ênte* for the others. This adjective may be used substantively. It was originally a present participle, and some Italian writers have used it as such.

Quésti vási sóno rótti.	<i>These vases are broken.</i>
La dônnâ sta cucêndo.	<i>The woman is sewing.</i>
Stávano parlândo.	<i>They were speaking.</i>
Un animâle parlânte.	<i>A speaking animal.</i>
Ácqua bollênte.	<i>Boiling water.</i>
Dúe amânti.	<i>Two lovers.</i>

(d) A whole conditional clause (or protasis) is often replaced in Italian by a present participle, or by an infinitive with *a*.

Andândovi lo vedrêbbe.	<i>If he went there, he would see it.</i>
A bucârsi êsce il sângue.	<i>If you prick yourself, blood comes.</i>

(e) Writers sometimes use, instead of a clause in indirect discourse, an infinitive followed by the word that would have been subject of the clause.

Disse êssere quésto l' uômo che cercavâmo.	<i>He said this was the man we were looking for.</i>
---	--

72. In negative commands the infinitive is always used instead of the second person *singular* of the imperative.

Trôvalo.	<i>Find it.</i>
Non lo trovâre.	<i>Do not find it.</i>

But the negative of *trovâtelô* is *non lo trovâte*.

73. When an action is represented as having taken place and still continuing, the English uses the present perfect or past perfect tense, the Italian the present or the past descriptive.

Stûdio l' italiáno da ôtto mési.	<i>I have studied Italian for eight months.</i>
-------------------------------------	---

74. In subordinate clauses referring to the future and introduced by a conjunction of time, where the present is often used in English, the future tense must be employed in Italian.

Quando vi andrò, glielo dirò. *When I go there, I'll tell him.*

(a) The future is often used, without any idea of future time, to express probability.

Sarà uscito.

He has probably gone out.

Avrà molto denaro.

He probably has a great deal of money.

75. The difference between the past descriptive (or imperfect) and the past absolute (or preterit) is this: the latter is used of an event that occurred at a definite date in the past, the former is used in a description or in speaking of an accessory circumstance or an habitual action in past time — the preterit is a narrative, the imperfect a descriptive tense.

The second past perfect* (or preterit perfect) is used — instead of the past perfect (or pluperfect) — only after conjunctions meaning *as soon as* (*appena che*, *súbito che*, *tôsto che*), and sometimes after *quando*, *when*, or *dopo che*, *after*, when immediate sequence is denoted.¹

Entrò mentre dormivamo.

He came in while we slept.

Facevo così ogni mattina.

I did so every morning.

Lo fece l'anno scorso.

He did it last year.

Tôsto che l'ebbe visto, usci.

As soon as he had seen it, he went.

(a) In conversation the present perfect is often used instead of the past absolute, when the event is not remote. This use is, however, far more restricted than it is in French.

Vi sono andato ieri.

I went there yesterday.

¹ It is used also in phrases like: *in cinque minuti ebbe finita la lettera*, *in five minutes he had the letter finished*.

76. The past future (or conditional), like the English *should* and *would*, has two uses: in *indirect discourse* after a principal verb in a past tense it expresses the tense which in direct discourse would be future¹; in the *conclusion* of a conditional sentence it is used when the conditional clause is (or, if expressed, would be) in the past subjunctive (see 77).

Disse che lo farèbbe.	<i>He said he would do it.</i>
Se fósse véro lo crederéi.	<i>If it were true, I should believe it.</i>
Quésta cásá mi converràbbe.	<i>This house would suit me.</i>

77. When a condition is contrary to *present* fact, or consists of a more or less unlikely supposition referring to *future* time,² the conditional clause has the past (or imperfect) subjunctive, the conclusive clause has the past future (or conditional).

If the unreal condition refers to *past* time, the conditional clause has the past perfect subjunctive, the conclusive clause has the past future perfect.³

Otherwise both condition and conclusion are in the indicative.

Se l' avéssi te lo daréi.	<i>If I had it, I should give it thee.</i>
Se fósse tornáto l' avréi vedáto.	<i>If he had returned, I should have seen him.</i>
Se venisse nól ce ne andrémmo.	<i>If he came, we should go.</i>
Se vi andássi morréi.	<i>If I should go there, I should die.</i>
Se non è véro è ben trováto.	<i>If it isn't true, it's a good invention.</i>
Se lo féce sarà puníto.	<i>If he did it, he will be punished.</i>

¹ The perfect of the future or the conditional is sometimes used where the simple tense would be expected: *disse che non l' avrà fatto più*, *he said he would do it, no more.*

² Rendered in English by the past, or by the auxiliary *should*.

³ The imperfect indicative is occasionally used to replace the past or past perfect subjunctive of the condition (or protasis) and the past future or past future perfect of the conclusion (or apodosis): as *se veniva*, *mi dicéva tutto*, *if he had come, he would have told me everything.*

(a) The missing persons of the imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive. The past subjunctive is used to express a wish that is not likely to be realized.

<i>Si accômodi.</i>	<i>Be seated (sing.).</i>
<i>Stiano zitti.</i>	<i>Be quiet (plur.).</i>
<i>Sia pûre.</i>	<i>Be it so.</i>
<i>Vêngano sùbito.</i>	<i>Let them come at once.</i>
<i>Fôsse pûre!</i>	<i>Would it were so!</i>

(b) When a relative clause restricts its antecedent to one of all its possible conditions or actions, the verb of that relative clause is in the subjunctive,— the present subjunctive if the verb on which it depends be present or future, the past if it be past or past future.

<i>Non c' è animâle più bellino d' un gâtto giôvane che fâc- cia il chiâssо.</i>	<i>There is no animal prettier than a kitten that is at play.</i>
<i>Dóve troveréte un giôvine che spôsi vói?</i>	<i>Where will you find a young man who will marry you?</i>
<i>Vorrêi vedére un bel quâdro che non fôsse antico.</i>	<i>I should like to see a fine picture that is not old.</i>

(c) The verb of a subordinate clause depending on an impersonal verb, on a superlative, or on one of the words *first*, *last*, and *only*, is in the subjunctive. This rule does not apply to reflexive verbs, nor to affirmative phrases meaning *it is true* or *it is because*.

<i>Bisognò ch' io vi andâssi.</i>	<i>I had to go there.</i>
<i>È giûsto che sfano puniti.</i>	<i>It's right they should be punished.</i>
<i>Il più bêllo ch' io conôsca.</i>	<i>The finest that I know.</i>
<i>Si véde che non è cosi.</i>	<i>You see it isn't so.</i>
<i>È véro che ci sôno stâto.</i>	<i>It's true that I've been there.</i>

(d) The subjunctive is used after all conjunctions meaning *although*, *as if*, *unless*, *provided that*, *in order that*, *in such a way that* (denoting purpose), *before*, *until* (referring to future), *whenever*, *wherever*, *without*.

<i>Benchè sfia nascôsto, lo tro- verò, dovûnque sia.</i>	<i>Although he be hidden, I shall find him, wherever he is.</i>
<i>Partirò a méno che égli non vênga.</i>	<i>I shall go unless he comes.</i>

Lo féce perchè io venissi.	<i>He did it that I might come.</i>
La divise in mōdo che le dūe pārti fōssero uguāli.	<i>He divided it in such a way that the two parts should be equal.</i>
Aspettā finchè io tōrni.	<i>Wait until I return.</i>
Pārti sénza che ti vēda.	<i>Go without his seeing you.</i>

(e) The subjunctive is used after the indefinite words and phrases **quále che**, **qualúnque**, **chiúnque**, **checchè**, **per quánto**.

Chiúnque/vēnga.	<i>Whoever comes.</i>
Qualúnque disgrázia che suc- cēda.	<i>Whatever misfortune happens.</i>
Per quánto vōlte ci vāda.	<i>However many times I go there.</i>
Per quánto ricco égli sia.	<i>However rich he may be.</i>

(f) The verb of an indirect question is nearly always in the subjunctive when it depends on a main verb in a past tense.¹

Domándano se il re è mōrto.	<i>They ask whether the king is dead.</i>
Domandò se il pādre fōsse uscito.	<i>He asked whether his father was out.</i>

(g) In a clause dependent on a verb of saying the subjunctive is used if the main verb is negative, or interrogative, or in a past tense.¹

It is generally not used, however, after an affirmative verb in a past tense when the author himself wishes to imply that the indirect statement is true.

Dice che la cōsa è chiaríssima.	<i>He says the thing is perfectly clear.</i>
Non dico che quēsto sia véro.	<i>I don't say this is true.</i>
Dissero che lo zio fōsse amma- lāto.	<i>They said their uncle was ill.</i>
Gli dīssi che mi chiamāva En- rico.	<i>I told him my name was Henry.</i>

(h) The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing causation, concession, desire, emotion, prevention, and uncertainty: i.e., after verbs of bringing about; granting, permitting; commanding, hoping, requesting, wishing; fearing, regretting, rejoicing; forbidding, hindering; being ignorant, denying, disbelieving, doubting, expect-

¹ The term *past tense* includes the past future.

ing, pretending, supposing, suspecting, thinking. But *sperare*, to hope, very often does not take the subjunctive.

Non so chi siano.	<i>I don't know who they are.</i>
Vorréi che non fósse accadúto.	<i>I wish it had not happened.</i>
Supponiamó che sia prováto.	<i>Let us suppose that it is proved.</i>
Spéro che verrá.	<i>I hope he will come.</i>

(i) *Se, if*, is occasionally omitted before a past subjunctive; in this case the subject, if expressed, must follow the verb.

Saréi felice venisse égli.	<i>I should be happy, should he come.</i>
----------------------------	---

CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS

CONJUNCTIONS

78. The principal conjunctions are:

after, dôpo che.	however (before an adj.), qualfin-que, per quânto.
also, ánche, pûre.	<i>if, se</i> (occasionally quândo, óve).
although, benchè, sebbêne, non ostânte che.	<i>in case, caso.</i>
and, e.	<i>in order that, perchè, acciochè, affinchè.</i>
as, cóme, quânto (after tanto).	<i>much less, non che.</i>
as (=since), siccóme, poichè.	<i>neither . . . nor, nè . . . nè.</i>
as fast as, vía vía che.	<i>nevertheless, tuttavia, nondimeno, però.</i>
as if, cóme se, quâsi.	<i>nor, nè, nemmêno, neppûre.</i>
as long as, finchè.	<i>nor . . . either, nemmêno, neppûre.</i>
as well as, cóme ánco.	<i>nor even, neánche, neppûre.</i>
because, perchè.	<i>not to say . . . but even, non che . . . ma.</i>
before, prima che, avânti che.	<i>or, o, ovvéro, ossia.</i>
both . . . and, e . . . e.	<i>or else, ossia.</i>
but, ma.	<i>provided that, purchè.</i>
either . . . or, o . . . o.	<i>rather, ánzi.</i>
even if, ánche se, ancorchè.	<i>since (temporal), dacchè.</i>
except that, se non che.	<i>since (causal), poichè, siccóme.</i>
for, chè.	<i>so, dúnque, adúnque.</i>
granting that, dâto che.	
however (=nevertheless), però,	
pûre.	

<i>so that</i> (result), <i>di modo che</i> , <i>sicché</i> .	<i>too, píre, anche.</i>
<i>so that</i> (= <i>in order that</i>), <i>perchè</i> .	<i>unless, a meno che non, eccetto che non, senza che.</i>
<i>than, che.</i>	<i>until, finchè non.</i>
<i>that, che.</i>	<i>when, quando.</i>
<i>that</i> (= <i>in order that</i>), <i>perchè</i> .	<i>whence, donde.</i>
<i>then, dunque.</i>	<i>where, dove, óve, là dove.</i>
<i>therefore, dunque, però, perciò</i> , <i>adúunque</i> (at the beginning of a clause).	<i>wherever, dovunque.</i>
	<i>whether, se.</i>
	<i>while, mentre, mentre che.</i>

The final vowel of *anche*, *che*, *dóve*, *neppúre*, and *óve* is generally elided before *e* or *i*.

(a) Of the above conjunctions the following require the subjunctive:

<i>acciochè</i>	<i>cóme se</i>	<i>prima che</i>
<i>affinchè</i>	<i>dáto che</i>	<i>purchè</i>
<i>a meno che non</i>	<i>dovúunque</i>	<i>qualúunque</i>
<i>ancorchè</i>	<i>eccetto che non</i>	<i>quasi</i>
<i>avánti che</i>	<i>non ostante che</i>	<i>sebbene</i>
<i>benchè</i>	<i>perchè meaning in order that</i>	<i>senza che</i>
<i>cáso</i>	<i>per quanto</i>	

For the use of *che*, *that*, with the subjunctive, see 77, *c, g, h*. *Cóme* is occasionally used for *cóme se*, and then it takes the subjunctive. *Finchè* when referring to the future sometimes has the sense of *finchè non*, and then it generally takes the subjunctive. *Se* is followed by the subjunctive when it introduces an indirect question or statement dependent on a verb in a past tense, or a condition contrary to fact. *Quando* and *óve*, meaning *if*, frequently take the subjunctive when *se* would not. — For examples, see 77, *c, d, f, g, h*.

(b) *Che* cannot be omitted in Italian as *that* is in English:¹

Disse che fósse véro. *He said it was true.*

Se can be omitted before an imperfect subjunctive (see 77, *i*).

¹ It is omitted, however, in the following peculiarly Italian construction: *il ragazzo partiva fósse felice*, *the boy seemed to be happy*; that is, between a verb of seeming and the subjunctive dependent on it, when in English the construction would be a verb of seeming with a dependent infinitive. It is occasionally omitted also after verbs of wishing, hoping, and fearing: as *spéro mi scriva prêsto*, *I hope you will write to me soon*.

(c) E and o are often written ed and od before a vowel.

Mio párde ed io.

My father and I.

(d) Between a verb of motion and an infinitive *and* is rendered by the preposition *a*.

Andrò a cercáro.

I'll go and look for it.

(e) When *anche*, *also* or *too*, relates to a personal pronoun, the disjunctive form of that pronoun must follow *anche*, even if some form of the same pronoun has already been expressed.

Andrémo anche noi.

We shall go too.

Párte anch' egli.

He goes away too.

Trováí anche lui.

I found him too.

Vénnero anch' éssi.

They came too.

Lo or me lo diéde anche a me.

He gave it to me too.

Ti piáce anche a te.

You like it too.

PREPOSITIONS

79. The principal prepositions are:

about (=approximately), *circa*.

beside (place), *accánto a*.

about (=around), *intórno a*, *at-*
tórnó a.

besides, *beside* (=in addition to),
oltre.

above, *sópra*.

between, *fra*, *tra*.

according to, *secóndo*.

beyond, *oltre*, *al di là di*.

after, *dópo*, *dópo di*.

by, *da*, *accánto a* (=beside).

against, *cóntra*, *cóntró*.

by means of, *per* *mézzo di*.

along, *lúngó*.

during, *duránte*.

among, *fra*, *tra*.

except, *tránne*, *eccéttó*, *fuôri di*.

around, *intórno a*, *attórno a*.

from, *da*, *fin da*.

as far as, *fino a*, *síno a*.

in, *in*.

as for, *per*, *quánto a*, *in quánto a*.

in front of, *davánti a*, *innánzi*.

as to, *rispêtto a*.

inside of, *déntro di*.

at, *a*.

instead of, *invéce di*.

because of, *per* *motivo di*.

in the midst of, *in* *mézzo a*.

before (time), *príma di*, *innánzi*.

into, *in*.

before (place), *davánti a*, *innánzi*.

near, *vicíno a*.

behind, *diétro*.

of, *di*.

below, *sóutto*.

on, *su* (before a vowel, *sur*), *sópra*.

<i>on this side of</i> , al di qua di.	<i>through, per.</i>
<i>on to, su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i>), sô-	<i>under, sotto.</i>
<i>pra.</i>	<i>upon, su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i>), sô-
<i>opposite, dirimpêto a.</i>	<i>pra.</i>
<i>out of, da, di, fuôri di.</i>	<i>up to, fino a, sino a.</i>
<i>outside of, fuôri di.</i>	<i>with, con.</i>
<i>over, sópra.</i>	<i>within, fra, tra.</i>
<i>round and round, tórnó tórnó a.</i>	<i>within (=inside of), dentro di.</i>
<i>since, da.</i>	<i>without, senza.</i>
<i>to, a.</i>	<i>without (=outside of), fuôri di.</i>
<i>toward, vêrso.</i>	

When governing a personal pronoun *côntre*, *diêtro*, *dôpo*, ~~x~~ *sézenza*, *sópra*, *sotto*, and often *fra* and *vêrso* take *di* after them:

sézenza di me, without me. *fra di lôro, among themselves.*

After *con*, *in*, *per*, a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i:*¹

la stráda, the street. *in istráda, in the street.*

(a) *To* before the name of a country, after a verb of motion, is *in*.

Andiâmo in Fráncia. *Let us go to France.*

(b) *To* before an infinitive is rendered in Italian as follows:

1. After the verbs

<i>bastáre, suffice</i>	<i>fâre, make</i>	<i>sentire, hear, feel</i>
<i>bisognâre, need</i>	<i>lasciare, let</i>	<i>solere, be accustomed</i>
<i>convenire, suit</i>	<i>parere, seem</i>	<i>udire, hear</i>
<i>desiderâre, desire</i>	<i>potere, can, be able</i>	<i>vedere, see</i>
<i>dovêre, must, ought</i>	<i>sapere, know</i>	<i>volere, wish</i>

to before a following infinitive is omitted. It is omitted also in exclamations and indirect questions consisting only of an interrogative and an infinitive.

Dovrêi capíre. *I ought to understand.*

Bisórgna pensârci. *It is necessary to look out for it.*

Potrémo venire. *We shall be able to come.*

Non sa che fâre nè dôve avvôl-^{ru} gersi. *He doesn't know what to do nor where to turn.* ~~X~~

¹ Cf. 58, a.

2. After verbs of accustoming, attaining, beginning, compelling, continuing, hastening, helping, inviting, learning, preparing, teaching, and after verbs of motion, *to* before a following infinitive is *a*.

Andranno a vedérla.	<i>They will go to see her.</i>
Si affrettò a rispondere.	<i>He hastened to reply.</i>

3. After all other verbs it is *di*; but *to* denoting purpose or result is *per*, and *to* indicating duty or necessity is *da*.

Gli dissi di scrivere.	<i>I told him to write.</i>
Mi è grato di dirlo.	<i>I am happy to say so.</i>
Lègge per divertirsi.	<i>He reads to amuse himself.</i>
È troppo basso per arrivárci.	<i>He's too short to reach it.</i>
Ho qualchedòsa da fàre.	<i>I have something to do.</i>

(c) *By* denoting the agent is *da*.

Fu fatto da lui.	<i>It was done by him.</i>
------------------	----------------------------

(d) *In* is *in*; but when expressing future time it is *fra*.

Fra tre giórni sarà finito.	<i>In three days it will be finished.</i>
-----------------------------	---

(e) *For* is *per*: as *l' ha fatto per me*, *he has done it for me*. But, in the sense of *since*, in speaking of past time, *for* is *da*. *For* meaning *during* is omitted or translated *durante*. Sentences like *it is right for him to do it* must be translated by *che* with the subjunctive: *è giusto che lo faccia*.

Dimòra da mólti ánni a Firènze.	<i>He has lived for many years at Florence</i> (see 73).
---------------------------------	--

Resterò cíngue settimáne.	<i>I shall stay for five weeks.</i>
---------------------------	-------------------------------------

Piòvve duránte un mése.	<i>It rained for a month.</i>
-------------------------	-------------------------------

Bisogna ch' fo váda.	<i>It is necessary for me to go.</i>
----------------------	--------------------------------------

(f) *From* is *da*; but before adverbs and sometimes after verbs of departing it is *di*. In speaking of time it is generally *fin da*.

Arriva da Parigi.	<i>He arrives from Paris.</i>
-------------------	-------------------------------

È lontáno di qua.	<i>It is far from here.</i>
-------------------	-----------------------------

Esco di cásá.	<i>I go out of the house.</i>
---------------	-------------------------------

Fin dal principio.	<i>From the beginning.</i>
--------------------	----------------------------

(g) *Da* has, in addition to the meanings *by*, *from*, *since*, another sense hard to render in English: it may be translated *as*, *charac-*

teristic of, destined for, such as to, or suited to, according to the context. Da means also *at the house of* or *to the house of*. Da corresponds to English *on, at, or to* before the word *side, parte,* used in its literal sense.

Prométtó da uômo d' onôre.	<i>I promise as a man of honor.</i>
Il Salvini da Otêllo.	<i>Salvini as Othello.</i>
Saréste tánto buôno da venire?	<i>Would you be so good as to come?</i>
Quésto è da sciôcchi.	<i>This is acting like a fool.</i>
Il bambino ha un giudízio da grânde.	<i>The child has the judgment of a grown person.</i>
La sâla da prânzo.	<i>The dining-room.</i>
Una tâzza da caffè.	<i>A coffee-cup.</i>
L' ho vedító dal Signór Néri.	<i>I saw him at Mr. Neri's.</i>
Viene da me.	<i>He comes to my house.</i>
Da quêsta parte.	<i>On this side.</i>

(h) A is often used before a noun — not indicating material (which is expressed by *di*) nor purpose (expressed by *da*) — that describes another noun, when in English these two substantives would form a compound word.

Úna mäcchina a vapôre.	<i>A steam-engine.</i>
Úna sédia a dôndolo.	<i>A rocking-chair.</i>
Úno sgabêllo a tre piêdi.	<i>A three-legged stool.</i>

(i) *Essere per* or *stâre per* means *to be about to.*

Stáva per parlâre.	<i>He was on the point of speaking.</i>
--------------------	---

(j) In some idiomatic phrases *di* is used in Italian when another preposition would be employed in English.

Di giôrno, di nôtte.	<i>By day, by night.</i>
Êssere contênto di úna côsa.	<i>To be satisfied with a thing.</i>
Vivo di páne.	<i>I live on bread.</i>
Che facéva délle fôrbici?	<i>What did he do with the scissors?</i>

ADVERBS

80. 1. Adverbs, unless they begin the clause, are generally placed immediately after the verb; *non*, however, always precedes the verb. When a compound tense is

used, the adverb nearly always follows the past participle, but **già**, **mai**, **più**, and **sempre** usually precede it. See also 84.

Non precedes a conjunctive and follows a disjunctive pronoun.

Non ci vado mai.

I never go there.

Ho parlato spesso.

I have often spoken.

Non ha sempre parlato così.

He hasn't always talked so.

Io non lo vedo.

I don't see him.

2. Adverbs are compared like adjectives (see 31); but **better**, **worse**, **more**, **less** are respectively **meglio**, **peggio**, **più**, **meno**.

81. **Yes** is **sì** or **già**: **sì** when it expresses real affirmation, **già** when it denotes passive assent. **No** is **no**. **Not** is **non**, after which a word beginning with **s** impure generally prefixes **i**. **Or not** at the end of a clause is **o no**:

Le piace? — Sì.

Do you like it? — Yes.

Che tempaccio! — Già.

What nasty weather! — Yes.

Sta bene? — No.

Is he well? — No.

Non istà bene.

He isn't well.

Sia vero o no.

Whether it be true or not.

(a) **What?** meaning **what do you say?** is **cóme?** **Che** and the interjection **o** are often used to introduce questions.

O perchè non rispondete? — *Why don't you answer? — What?*

Cóme? — Che siéte sórdo, — *Are you deaf, sir?*

signóre?

(b) **Very** is **mólto** (see, however, 35, a). Instead of using a word or suffix for **very**, the Italians often repeat the emphasized adjective or adverb.

È mólto béllo or è bellissimo. *It is very beautiful.*

I suòi genitóri érano pôveri His parents were very poor.
pôveri.

82. **Only** may be translated by the adverb **sólo**, **soltánto**, or **solaménte**; or by the adjective **sólo**. When it modifies

anything but a verb, it is often rendered by **non . . . che**, with the whole verb intervening, and with the word modified by *only* immediately after **che**.

Non ne ho compráto che díe. *I have bought only two of them.*

83. *Never* is **non . . . mái**, with the inflected part of the verb intervening. *Just*, as an adverb of time, is **or óra**. *Early* is **prêsto**, *per têmpo*, or **di buôn' óra**. *This morning* is **stamáne**; *last night* is **stanôtte**. *The day after to-morrow* and *the day before yesterday* are respectively **domán l' áltro** and **iêr l' áltro**. *A week*, *a fortnight from to-day* are **ôggi a ôtto**, *a quíndici*. *Ago* is translated by **fa**, which follows the substantive of time; if this substantive is plural, *ago* may be rendered also by **sóno** (**êrano** or **saránnno** if the date from which time is counted be past or future).

Non ti ha mái vedúto.

He has never seen thee.

Son arriváti or óra.

They have just arrived.

Tre ánni fa.

Three years ago.

Quâtro górnî sóno.

Four days ago.

Lunedì êrano dûe settimáne.

Two weeks ago Monday.

Dománi saránnno cíque mési.

Five months ago to-morrow.

84. *Here* and *there*, when they denote a place already mentioned, and no particular stress is laid upon them, are **ci** and **vi**, which are often used in Italian when they would be superfluous in English; *there is*, *there are*, etc., are **c' è** or **vi è**, **ci sóno** or **vi sóno**, etc. (sometimes **vi ha**). **Ci**, **vi**, and also **ne**, *thence*, occupy the same positions with regard to the verb, and undergo the same changes, as the pronouns **ci**, **vi**, **ne** (48, 50); they precede conjunctive pronouns beginning with **l** or **n**, and follow all others: **ce lo mánda**, **ti ci mándo**.

When emphasized, *here* is **qui** or **qua**, *there* indicating a place near the person addressed is **costí** or **costà**, and *there*

denoting a point remote from both speaker and hearer is *lì* or *là*.

Cáro vi è tornáto.

Álla scuóla non ci vádo.

Vói rimarréte costà, égli
resterà laggiù, ed io non
partirò di qui.

Charles has gone back there.

I don't go to school.

*You will remain where you are, he
will stay down there, and I shall
not move from here.*

(a) *Here I am, here it is, etc., are eccomi, eccolo, etc.*

85. Most adverbs of manner are formed by adding *-mente* to the feminine singular of the corresponding adjective. Adjectives in *-le* and *-re* drop their final *e* in forming the adverb. See 35, a.

franco, frank.

felice, happy.

piacévole, pleasant.

francamente, frankly.

felicemente, happily.

piacevolmente, pleasantly.

(a) *So meaning it is translated to:*

Lo fáccio.

Lo créde.

Lo dícono.

I do so.

He thinks so.

They say so.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

86. *One, people, we, you, they, used in an indefinite sense,* are rendered in Italian by the reflexive construction with *si* (see 55).

Si cánta bêne in Itália.

Si fa cosí.

Se ne párla.

Si fánno spésso quésté cose.

They sing well in Italy.

You do this way.

People speak of it.

One often does these things.

87. *All as a substantive is tutto (tútti, etc.):*

Tacévano tutto.

All were silent.

The adjective *all*, *the whole* is tutto followed by the definite article.

Tutta la terra.	<i>The whole earth.</i>
Tutto il giorno.	<i>All day.</i>
Tutte le romane son belle.	<i>All Roman ladies are beautiful.</i>

88. *Any*, when it really adds nothing to the sense, is omitted:

Non ha libri.	<i>He hasn't (any) books.</i>
Voléte vino?	<i>Do you want (any) wine?</i>

When, however, this redundant *any* might be replaced by *any of the*, it is translated by the partitive construction (see 12, a):

Voléte del vino?	<i>Do you want any (of the) wine?</i>
------------------	---------------------------------------

Any used substantively in the sense of *any of it*, *any of them* is ne (see 47, 3):

Non ne ho.	<i>I haven't any.</i>
Non ne ha più.	<i>He hasn't any more.</i>
Ne avéte?	<i>Have you any?</i>

Any used adjectively and meaning *any whatsoever* is qualunque:

Lo fa meglio di qualunque altra persona.	<i>He does it better than any other person.</i>
--	---

89. *Some*, when it adds nothing to the sense, is omitted or rendered by the partitive construction:

Voléte burro or voléte del burro?	<i>Will you have some butter?</i>
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------

Some meaning *some of it*, *some of them* is ne:

Ne ha.	<i>He has some.</i>
--------	---------------------

Otherwise *some* is *alcúno* or *quálche*. *Quálche* is always singular (even when the meaning is plural), and is never used substantively.

*Alcúne persóne or quálche
persóna.* *Some persons.*

Alcúni lo dicono. *Some say so.*

90. *Some . . . others, the one . . . the other, one . . . another* are translated by *chi . . . chi*, *áltre . . . áltre*, *l' fino . . . l' áltro*, or *alcúni . . . alcúni*.

Alcúni used in this way is always plural. A verb whose subject is *chi* or *áltre* (used in this sense) is always singular; *altri* is not used after prepositions. But *l' fino* and *l' áltro* can be used in any case or number.

*Tútti, chi piú tósto, e chi
méno, morívano.* *All died, some sooner, some later.*

Áltre cáde, áltre fúgge. *Some fall, others flee.*

*Gli úni son buóni, gli áltre
cattívi.* *Some are good, others bad.*

91. Following is a list of some other indefinite pronouns and adjectives:

*anybody, qualcúno, qualchedúno,
chicchessía, pronouns.*

any more, piú, ne . . . piú, pron.

anything, qualchecósa, pron.

anything else, áltro, pron.

*both, tútti e díue, l' fino e l' áltro,
ambedúe, pron. or adj.*

certain, cértó, adj.

each, ógni, ciascúno, ognúno, adj.

*either, l' uno o l' áltro, pron. or
adj.*

*every, ógni, ciascúno, ognúno, cia-
shedúno, adj.*

*everybody, tútti (pl.), ciaschedúno,
ciascúno, ognúno, pron.*

everything, títutto, pron.

few, a few, pôchi (pl.), pron. or adj.

*however much (or many), per
quanto (-ti), adj.*

little, pôco, pron. or adj.

less, méno, pron. or adj.¹

many, mólti, pron. or adj.²

more, piú, pron. or adj.

much, móltito, pron. or adj.

*neither, non . . . l' uno né l' áltro,
né l' uno né l' áltro, pron. or
adj.*

*no, non . . . nessúno, non . . . al-
cúno, adj.*

nobody, non . . . nessúno, pron.

¹ *Less=smaller* is *piú piccolo*.

² *A great many* is *moltissimi*.

<i>no more, non ne . . . più</i> , pron.	<i>somebody, qualcheduno, qualcuno,</i>
<i>non . . . più</i> , adj.	<i>pron.</i>
<i>none, non ne . . .</i> , pron.	<i>something, qualchecosa, pron.</i>
<i>nothing, non . . . niente, non . . .</i>	<i>something else, altro, pron.</i>
<i>nulla, pron.</i>	<i>such, tale, adj.</i>
<i>nothing else, non . . . più niente,</i>	<i>such a, un tale, adj. (but also pron.</i>
<i>non . . . più nulla, pron.</i>	<i>in Ital., meaning so-and-so).</i>
<i>others, altrui (see 91, d), pron.</i>	<i>whatever, qualunque (invariable),</i>
<i>several, paréccoli (fem. paréccchie),</i>	<i>adj.</i>
<i>pron. or adj.</i>	

(a) The verb used with *nessuno, alcuno, niente, nulla* (meaning *no, nobody, nothing*) must be preceded by *non, not*, unless this pronoun or adjective precedes the verb.

<i>Non ho visto nessuno.</i>	<i>I have seen nobody.</i>
<i>Nessún popolo lo possiede.</i>	<i>No people possesses it.</i>

(b) *Nothing, followed by an adjective, is niente di.*

<i>Non avete niente di buono.</i>	<i>You have nothing good.</i>
-----------------------------------	-------------------------------

(c) *Ciascuno, ciascheduno, ognuno, nessuno, and alcuno* when used adjectively are inflected like *uno* (see 14, 15).

(d) *Altrui, another, others, our neighbor, is invariable, and is not used as subject of a verb:*

<i>Con altrui.</i>	<i>With other people.</i>
<i>Chi ama altrui ama sè stesso.</i>	<i>He who loves his neighbor loves himself.</i>

The prepositions *di* and *a* are sometimes omitted before it:

<i>La mostro altrui.</i>	<i>I point her out to others.</i>
<i>La voglia altrui.</i>	<i>The will of another.</i>

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

Arranged according to Conjugation.¹

92. This list contains no compound verbs except those which differ in conjugation from their simple verbs and those for which no simple verb exists in Italian. With every verb its irregular forms are given: in the same line with the infinitive are the present participle (if it be needed to show the original form of the infinitive), the first person singular of the past absolute indicative, the past participle, and the first person singular of the future indicative (if the future be contracted); immediately below are the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive, if these parts be peculiar. For *dáre* and *stáre* the whole past absolute and the first person singular of the past subjunctive are given also. *Essere* is irregular throughout. *All tenses not mentioned are regular.* For peculiar endings, see 63, 68. Note the following rules:

(a) If the *present participle* is given, the following forms, unless expressly mentioned, are to be constructed from its stem: all *past absolute forms with accented endings*, and the whole *past descriptive* and *past subjunctive*. E.g., *fáre*, pres. part. *facêndo*: hence past abs. 2d sing. and 1st and 2d pl., *facésti*, *facémmo*, *facéste*; past descr., *facéva*, etc.; past subj., *facéssi*, etc.

If the present participle is not given, these forms, unless they be mentioned, are to be constructed from the stem of the infinitive. E.g., *veníre*: past abs., *venísti*, *venímmo*, *veníste*; past descr., *veníva*; past subj., *veníssi*.

(b) A past absolute whose 1st pers. sing. ends in *-ái*, *-éi*, *-íi*, or *-étti* (except *détti* and *stétti*) is regular throughout. In any other past absolute the third person singular can be formed from the

¹ Reference to these tables is facilitated by an Alphabetical List of Irregular and Defective Verbs (see page 92). Students are advised not to learn forms in parentheses nor any verbs or forms marked *rare* or *poetical*.

first person by changing final i to e, and the third person plural by adding -ro to the third person singular. E.g., *fáre*, p. abs. *féci*: 3d sing., *féce*; 3d pl., *fécerō*.

(c) If the future is not given, it is to be constructed from the infinitive. The past future always has the same stem as the future. See 65, p. 57.

(d) The imperative, when not given, is like the corresponding forms of the present indicative. See 66, b.

FIRST CONJUGATION

1. *Andáre, go*, andái, andáto; andrò (anderò).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.		PRES. SUBJ.
vádo or vò	andiámo	va'		váda andiámo
vái	andáte	andiámo		váda andiáte
va	vánno	andáte		váda vádano

2. *Fáre, do, facêndo, féci*,¹ *fátto*; *fardò*. *Fáre* (*formerly also fácerē*) was originally a verb of the third conjugation (see 92, a).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.		PRES. SUBJ.
fáccio or fò	facciámo	fa'		fáccia facciámo
fái ²	fáte	facciámo		fáccia facciáte
fa ³	fánno	fáte		fáccia fácciano

3. *Dáre, give*, diéddi or dëtti, dáto; dardò. *Past subj.* déssi.

PRES. IND.	PAST. ABS.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
dó	diéddi or dëtti		día
dái	déstí	da'	día
dá	diéde or dëtte ³		día
diámo	démmo	diámo	diámo
dáte	désté	dáte	dáte
dánno	diéddero or dëttero ³		díano or díeno

¹ In poetry we sometimes find a past abs. *féi*, *féstí*, *fé* or *féo*, *fémmo*, *fésté*, *férono* or *féro* or *fémno*; and past descr. *féa*, etc.

² Also *fáci* *fáce*.

³ Also *díè*, sing.; *díér* or *díéro* or *díérno*, pl.

4. **Stáre** (67, a), *stand, stétti, státo; starò. Past subj. stéssi.*

PRES. IND.	PAST. ABS.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
stô	stétti		stia
stâi	stésti	sta'	stia
sta	stétte		stia
stiâmo	stémmo	stiâmo	stiâmo
stâte	stéste	stâte	stâte
stârno	stéttoro		stiano or stieno

SECOND CONJUGATION

5. **Avére, have, ébbi, avúto; avrò. See 53, b.¹**

6. **Sapére, know, séppi, sapúto; saprò.**

PRES. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
sô . sappiâmo	sâppi	sâppia sappiâmo
sâi sapéte	sappiâmo	sâppia sappiâte
sa sârno	sappiâte	sâppia sâppiano

7. **Cadére, fall, cáddi, cadúto; cadrò.**

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
câdo (câggio)	cadiâmo (caggiâmo)
câdi	cadiâte
câde	câdono (câggiono)

8. **Dovére, owe, dovéi (dovétti), dovúto; dovrò. Imperative lacking.**

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
dêvo (dêbbo or dêggio)	dêbba (dêva or dêggia)
dêvi (dêbbi)	dêbba (dêva or dêggia)
dêve (dêbbe)	dêbba (dêva or dêggia)
dobbiâmo (deggiâmo)	dobbiâmo
dovéte	dobbiâte
dêvono (dêbbono or dêggiono) ²	dêbbano (dêvano or dêggiano)

9. **Sedére, sit, sedéi or sedétti, sedúto.**

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
siêdo or sêggo	sedâmo (seggâmo)
siêdi	sedâte
siêde	siêdono or sêggono

¹ In poetry we find: ággio, ábbo, or áio for ho; áve for ha; ággia or áia for ábbia; & for ébbi; a future arò, etc., or averò, etc., and similar forms in the past future.

² Also dêo, dêi, dêe, dovrâmo, dovrâte, dêmono or dêrno.

10. **Vedére**, *see*, vídi, vedúto or visto; vedrò. **Provvedére** *has a future provvederò*; **prevedére** *has prevederò or prevedrò*. *All other compounds are like vedére.*

PRES. IND.

védo (véggo or véggio)	véda (végga or véggia)
védi	véda (végga or véggia)
véde	véda (végga or véggia)
vediámo (veggíamo)	vediámo (veggíamo)
vedéte	vediáte (veggíate)
védono (véggono or véggiono)	védano (véggano or véggiano)

PRES. SUBJ.

11. **Giacére**, *lie, giacqui, giaciúto*.

PRES. IND.

giáccio	giacciámo	giáccia	giacciámo
giáci	giacéte	giáccia	giacciáte
giáce	giácciono	giáccia	giácciano

PRES. SUBJ.

12. **Piacére**, *please: like giacére* (11).

13. **Tacére**, *be silent: like giacére* (11).

14. **Solére**, *be wont, sólito*. *No past. abs., fut., past fut., nor imperative.*

PRES. IND.

sôglio	sogliámo	sôglia	sogliámo
suôli	sólite	sôglia	sogliáte
suóle	sogliono	sôglia	sogliano

PRES. SUBJ.

15. **Dolére**, *grieve, dôlsi, dolúto; dorrò*.

PRES. IND.

dôlgo (dôglgio)	dôgliámo ¹	dôlga (dôglgia)	dôgliámo ¹
dôlli	dôlité	dôlga (dôglgia)	dôgliáte
dôlce	dôlgono (dôgliono)	dôlga (dôglgia)	dôlgano (dôgliano)

PRES. SUBJ.

16. **Rimanére**, *remain, rimási, rimásto or rimáso; rimarrò*.

PRES. IND.

rimângó	rimaniámo ²	rimânga	rimaniámo ²
rimâni	rimanéte	rimânga	rimaniáte
rimâne	rimângono	rimânga	rimângano

PRES. SUBJ.

¹ Also dolghiámo: a popular form.

² Also rimanghiámo: a popular form.

17. *Tenére, hold, ténni, tenító; terrò.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
têngo	teníamo ¹	tênga	teníamo ¹
tiéni	tenéte	tênga	teníate
tiéne	têngono	tênga	têngano

18. *Valére, be worth, válsi, valúto or válso; varrò.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
vâlgio (vâglia)	vagliámo	vâlga (vâglia)	vagliámo ¹
vâli	valéte	vâlga (vâglia)	vagliáte
vâle	vâlgono (vâgliono)	vâlga (vâglia)	vâlgano (vâgliano)

19. *Volére, wish, vâlli,² volúto; vorrò.*

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
vâglio (vo ³)	vogliámo	vôgli	vôglia	vogliámo
vûôli ³	voléte	vogliámo	vôglia	vogliáte
vûôle	vôgliono	vogliáte	vôglia	vôgliano

20. *Parére, seem, párví, parúto or pársó; partò.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
pâio	pâlamo or pariámo	pâla	pâlamo or pariámo
pâri	paréte	pâia	pâite
pâre	pâiono	pâia	pâiano

21. *Potére, be able, potéi, potúto; potrò.⁴ No imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
pôsso	possiámo	pôssa	possiámo
pudi	potéte	pôssa	possiáte
pud ⁵	pôssono ⁵	pôssa	pôssano

22. *Persuadére, persuade, persuási, persuáso. Pres. persuádo, etc.*23. *Calére, matter, cálse, calúto. Impersonal. No fut., past fut., nor imperative. Not modern.*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
câle	câglia

¹ Also tenghiámo; valighiámo: popular forms.² Also vâlsi.³ Also vuôgli or vuôlli.⁴ In poetry we find a fut. porò and a past fut. poria.⁵ Also puôte; pômno.

THIRD CONJUGATION

(e) All irregular verbs of the third conjugation are accented, in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, on the same syllable as in the infinitive.

(f) Verbs in -cere and -gere insert no i between the c or g and the o or a of the present indicative and subjunctive endings, except in the first person plural of both moods and the second person plural of the subjunctive. Cf. 60, last paragraph.

(g) See chapter on Pronunciation, 4, s. d.

Present Regular

24. **Accēdere**, *light*, accési, accéso.
25. **Affīggere**, *afflict*, afflissi, afflitto.
26. **Álgere**, *be cold*, álsi. *Defective. Rare.*
27. **Allūdere**, *allude*, allúsi (alludéi), allúso.
28. **Árdere**, *burn*, ársi, árso.
29. **Arrōgere**, *add*, arrósi, arróso or arrótio. *Defective. Rare.*
30. **Assidere**, *besiege*, assisi, assíso. *Rare.*
31. **Assólvere**, *absolve*, assolvéti or assolvéi or assólssi, assólto or assolúto. *So risólvere (determine). For sólvere, dissólvere, and risólvere (dissolve), see 107.*
32. **Assóbere**, *absorb*, assórsi (*not in use*), assórtio. *Rare.*
33. **Avéllere**, *uproot*, aválse, aválso. *Defective. Rare.*
34. **Chiúdere**, *shut*, chiúsi, chiúso. *So all verbs in -chiúdere or -clúdere. See, however, 4, s. d.*
35. **Cólere**, *revere*, cólto or cútlo. *Defective. Rare.*
36. **Connétttere**, *connect*, connéssi (connéttéi), connésso (connéttito). *Rare.*
37. **Conóscere**, *know*, conóbbi, conoscídito.
38. **Conquidere**, *conquer*, conquíssi, conquísio. *Rare.*
39. **Consúmere**, *consume*, consúnsi, consúnto. *Rare. Presúmere has also presuméi.*
40. **Contúndere**, *bruise*, contúsi, contúsio.
41. **Córrere**, *run*, córsi, córso.
42. **Créscere**, *grow*, crébbi, cresciúto.
43. **Cuóccere**, *cook*, cocéndo, côssi, cotto. *Pres. cuóccio or cuóco, etc.¹*

¹ In the 1st and 2d persons plural of the pres. ind., subj., and imperative, uo is generally replaced by o: cocímo, etc. The uo occurs in those parts of the verb where the accent falls on that syllable.

44. **Decidere, decide**, decfsi, decfso.
45. **Difendere, defend**, difési (difendéi), diféso.
46. **Dirigere, direct**, diréssi, diréttto.
47. **Discutere, discuss**, discussi (discutéi), discusso.
48. **Distinguere, distinguish**, distinsi, distinto.
49. **Dividere, divide**, divisi, diviso.
50. **Elidere, elide**, elfsi (elidéi), elfso.
51. **Eludere, elude**, elúsi (eludéi or eludétti), elúso.
52. **Érgere, erect**, érsi, érto. *Rare.*
53. **Esigere, exact**, esigéi (esigétti), esátto.
54. **Esistere, exist**, esistéi (esistétti), esistito.
55. **Espellere, expel**, espúlsi, espúlso. *Rare.*
56. **Explodere, explode**, esplosi, esplosó.
57. **Esprimere, express**, espréssi, espréssso. *So all other verbs in -primere. Prémere and its compounds with è are regular.*
58. **Fendere, split**, fendéi (fendétti or fessi), fendúto or fesso.
59. **Figgere (figere), fix**, fissi, fitto.
60. **Fingere, feign**, finsi, finto.
61. **Fondere, melt**, fusi (fondéi), fusó (fondúto).
62. **Frangere, break**, fránsi, fránto.
63. **Friggere, fry**, frissi, frítto.
64. **Genuflettere, kneel**, genuflessi, genuflesso. *Rare.*
65. **Intridere, dilute**, intríssi, intríso.
66. **Intrúdere, intrude**, intrúsi, intrúso.
67. **Invadere, invade**, invási, inváso.
68. **Lèdere, offend**, lési (*not in use*), lèso. *Rare.*
69. **Lèggere, read**, lèssi, lètto.
70. **Licere or léccere, be lawful**, lécito or licito. *Impersonal. Defective. Poetical.*
71. **Lúdere, play**, lúsi, lúso. *Rare.*
72. **Mèrgere, plunge**, mérssi, mérso. *Rare.*
73. **Métttere, put**, méssi or misi, méssso.
74. **Mòlcere, soothe**, mólse. *Defective. Rare.*
75. **Mòrdere, bite**, mórsi, mórsso.
76. **Mùovere, move**, movéndo, móssi, móssso.¹
77. **Nàscere, be born**, nácqui, náto.
78. **Nascòndere, hide**, nascóssi, nascósto.
79. **Negligere (see 5, gli)**, neglect, negléssi, neglètto.
80. **Offèndere, offend**, offéssi, offéso.
81. **Ostèndere, show**. *Defective. Rare.*
82. **Percipere, perceive**, percéttto. *Defective. Rare.*
83. **Pèrdere, lose**, perdéi or perdétti or pérssi, perdúto or pérso.
84. **Piòvere, rain**, piòvve (piovè), piovúto. *Impersonal.*

¹ See page 85, footnote.

85. Pôrgere, *present*, pôrsi, pôrto.
86. Predilígere, *prefer*, predilêssi, predilêtto.
87. Prêndere, *take*, prêsi, prêso.
88. Protêggere, *protect*, protêssi, protêtto.
89. Râdere, *shave*, râsi (*radéi*), râso.
90. Redimere, *redem*, redênsi (*rediméi*), redênto.
91. Râggere, *support*, rêssi, rêtto.
92. Rêndere, *render*, rêsí (*rendéi* or *rendêtti*), résó (*rendúto*).
93. Ridere, *laugh*, rîsi, rîso.
94. Riflêtttere, *reflect*, riflettéi or riflêssi, riflettítto or riflêssso. *Riflêtttere*, *reflect light*, is generally irregular; *riflêtttere*, *meditate*, is usually regular.
95. Riffülgere, *shine*, rifúlsi. *Past part. lacking. Poetical.*
96. Rilûcere, *shine*, rilüssi or rilucéi. *Past part. lacking.*
97. Rispondere, *answer*, rispôsi, rispôsto.
98. Rôdere, *gnaw*, rôsi, rôso.
99. Rômpere, *break*, rûppi, rôtto.
100. Scéndere, *descend*, scési, scéso.
101. Scîndere, *sever*, scîndéi or scîssi, scîssso.
102. Sciôlvare, *breakfast*, sciôlsi or sciolvêtti, sciôlto. *Rare..*
103. Scôrgere, *perceive*, scôrsi, scôrto.
104. Scrîvere, *write*, scrissi, scritto.
105. Scuôtere, *shake*, scotêndo, scôssi, scôssso.¹
106. Soffôlcere, *support*, soffôlse, soffôlto. *Defective. Rare.*
107. Sôlvere, *undo*, solvéi (*solvêtti*), solúto. *Poetical. So dissôlvere; for assôlvere and risôlvere (determine), see 31.*
108. Sôrgere, *rise*, sôrsi, sôrto.
109. Sospêndere, *suspend*, sospêsi, sospêso. *So appêndere, impêndere. Pêndere is reg.; dipêndere either reg. or irreg.*
110. Spândere, *spill*, spandéi or spandêtti, spânto.
111. Spârgere, *scatter*, spârsi, spârso or spárto.
112. Spêndere, *spend*, spêsi, spêso.
113. Spêrgere, *disperse*, spêrsi, spêrso. *Rare.*
114. Spôrgere, *project*, spôrsi, spôrto.
115. Strûggere, *melt*, strûssi, strûtto.
116. Succêdere, *happen*, succêssi or succedéi, succêssso or succedûto. *So concêdere, which has also concedêtti; cêdere and its other compounds are generally regular.*
117. Sûggere, *suck*, suggéi or süssi. *Past part. lacking. Rare.*
118. Têndere (*transitive*), *extend*, têsi, téso. *The intrans. verb is reg. but has no past participle.*
119. Têrgere, *wipe*, têrsi or tergéi, têrso. *Rare.*
120. Tôrcere, *twist*, tôrsi, tôrto.

¹ See page 85, footnote.

- 121. **Uccidere**, *kill*, uccisi, ucciso.
- 122. **Vincere**, *conquer*, vinsi, vinto.
- 123. **Vivere**, *live*, vissi, vissuto or vivuto; viverò or vivrò.
- 124. **Volgere**, *turn*, volsi, volto.
- 125. **Volvere**, *turn*, volsi, volto. *Rare.* Devolvere has a past part. devoluto.

Present Irregular

126. **Essere**, *be*, fui, státo; sard. See 53, a.¹

127. **Bére or bévere**, *drink*, bevendo, bévvi (bevetti or bevái), bevuto (bedtó); berò or beverò.

PRES. IND.

bévo or béo	beviámo or beiámo
bévi or béis	bevete or beéte
béve or bée	bévono or béono

PRES. SUBJ.

béva or béra	beviámo or beiámo
béva or béra	beviáte or beiáte
béva or béra	bévanó or bénano

128. **Chièdere**, *ask*, chiési (chiési or chiedéi), chiéstò.

PRES. IND.

chièdo (chièggo) ²
chièdi
chiède
chiediámo
chiedéte
chiedono (chièggono) ²

PRES. SUBJ.

chièda (chiègga) ²
chièda (chiègga)
chièda (chiègga)
chiediámo
chiediéte
chiedano (chièggano) ²

129. **Condúrre**, *conduct*, conducéndo, condússi, condótto; condurrò.

PRES. IND.

condúco	conducíamo
condáci	conducéte
condáce	condúcono

PRES. SUBJ.

condúca	conducíamo
condúca	conducíate
condúca	condúcano

130. **Nuôcere**, *harm*, nocéndo, nôequi, nociúto.

PRES. IND.

nuôco or nôccio	nociámo
nuôci	nocéte
nuôce	nuôcono or nôcciono

PRES. SUBJ.

nuôca or nôccia	nociámo
nuôca or nôccia	nociáte
nuôca or nôccia	nuôcano or nôcciano

¹ In the past descriptive éramo is often used for eravámo. We find in poetry: sête for siête; énno or en for sónno (third pl.); sie for sia; erámo, eráte for eravámo, eraváte; u for o in the past absolute and past subjunctive; fóro for fúrono; fia, fiano or fieno for sarà, saránno; fóra, fórano for saréi, sarébbe, sarébbero; sêndo for eséndo; súto, issúto, or issúto for státo.

² Also chièggio, chièggiono, chièggia, chièggiano.

131. Pôrre, *put*, ponêndo, pôsi, pôsto; portô.

PRES. IND.

póngó	poniâmo (ponghiâmo)	póngâ	poniâmo (ponghiâmo)
póni	ponéte	póngâ	poniâte
pône	póngono	póngâ	póngano

PRES. SUBJ.

132. Trárre (*träere*), *drag*, traêndo, trássi, trátto; trarrô.

PRES. IND.

trággo	traiâmo or traggiâmo ¹	trágga	traiâmo or traggiâmo ¹
trái (träggi)	traéte	trágga	traiâte
träe (trägge)	träggono	trágga	träggano

PRES. SUBJ.

133. Vêllere (*vêrre*), *tear up*, vêlsi, vêlto; vellerô (*verrô or velgerô*).
Vêllere, which is rare, has not all the forms given here; but its compound, svêllere, has them all.

PRES. IND.

vêllo or vêlgo	velliâmo (velgiâmo)	vêlla or vêlga	velliâmo (velgiâmo)
vêlli (vêlgi)	velléte	vêlla or vêlga	velliâte (velgiâte)
vêlle (vêlige)	vêllono or vêlgono	vêlla or vêlga	vêllano or vêlgano

PRES. SUBJ.

134. Côgliere (*côrre*), *gather*, côlsi, côlto; coglierô or corrô.

PRES. IND.

côlgo (côglie)	cogliâmo (colghiâmo)	côlga (côglia)	cogliâmo (colghiâmo)
côgli	cogliête	côlga (côglia)	cogliâte
côglie	côlgono (côgliono)	côlga (côglia)	côlgano (côgliano)

PRES. SUBJ.

135. Scégliere (*scérre*), *choose*: like côgliere (134).136. Sciôgliere (*sciôrre*), *untie*: like côgliere (134).137. Tôgliere. (*tôrre*), *take*: like côgliere (134).138. Giúngere (*giúgnere*), *to arrive*, giúnsi, giúnto; giungerô (giúnerô).

PRES. IND.

giúngo (giúgno)	giúnga (giúgna)
giúngi (giúgni)	giúnga (giúgna)
giúnge (giúgne)	giúnga (giúgna)
giungiâmo (giugniâmo)	giungiâmo (giugniâmo)
giungéte (giugnête)	giungiâte (giugniâte)
giúngono (giúgnono)	giúngano (giúgnano)

PRES. SUBJ.

139. Cingere (*cignere*), *gird*: like giúngere (138).140. Múgnere (*múngere*), *milk*: like giúngere (138).¹ Also traggiâmo.

141. Piángere (*piagnere*), weep: like giúngere (138).
 142. Pingere (*pignere*), paint: like giúngere (138).
 143. Púngere (*púgnere*), prick: like giúngere (138).
 144. Spégnere (*spéngere*), extinguish: like giúngere (138), except that the forms with gn are far commoner than those with ng.
 145. Spíngere (*spignere*), push: like giúngere (138).
 146. Stringere (*strignere*), bind: like giúngere (138), except that the past part. is stréto or strinto. Costringere, compel, has for past part. only costréttio.
 147. Tingere (*tignere*), dye: like giúngere (138).
 148. Úngere (*úgnere*), anoint: like giúngere (138).

FOURTH CONJUGATION

Present Regular

149. Aprire, open, aprii or apérssi, apérto. Pres. ápro, etc.
 150. Coprire (*cuoprifre*), cover, coprii or copérsi, copérto. Pres. còpro (*cuópro*), etc.
 151. Offrire (*offerire*), offer, offrii (*offerii*) or offérsi, offértio. Pres. óffro (*offerisco*), etc.
 152. Soffrire, suffer: like offrire (151).
 153. Convertire, convert, convertli or convérsi, convertito or convérso. Pres. convérto or convertisco, etc. All other verbs in -vertire are reg.
 154. Costruire (*construire*), construct, co(n)strússi or co(n)struì, co(n)struito or co(n)strútto. Pres. co(n)struisco, etc.
 155. Digerire, digest, digeríi, digerítio (*digésto*). Pres. digerisco, etc.
 156. Esaurire, exhaust, esauríi, esaurítio or esáusto. Pres. esaurisco, etc.
 157. Sepellire or sepellifre, bury, sep(p)elli, seppellito or sepólto. Pres. sep(p)ellisco, etc.

Present Irregular

158. Cucire, sew, cucíi, cucíto. Pres. cício or cucisco. This verb inserts i before o and a, but not before e and i.
 159. Sdrucire or sdruscire, rip: like cucíre (158).
 160. Empíre or émpiere, fill, empiéndo, empi, empítio. All but the present from the stem of empíre. So compíre or cómpiere, which has also a past part. compíuto.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
émpio (<i>empisco</i>)	émpia
émpi (<i>empisci</i>)	émpia
émpie (<i>empisce</i>)	émpiano (<i>empiscono</i>)
	émpia
	émpiate
	émpiano

161. **Morir**, *díe*, morfi, mōrto; morrō or morirō.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
muōlo (muōro)	moriámo or muoiá- mo	muōia (muōra)	moriámo or muoi- ámo
muōri or muōi	moríte	muōia (muōra)	muoiáte
muōre	muōiono (muōro- no)	muōia (muōra)	muōiano (muōra- no) ¹

162. **Seguir**, *follow*, segui, seguíto. Pres. séguo, etc. The verb is generally regular; but the é may be changed to ié in all forms where it is accented. Proseguir has -séguo or -seguisco.

163. **Sparir**, *disappear*, sparíi or spárvi, sparíto. Pres. (regular) sparisco, etc. Apparir has appárvi or -si or -fi, apparito or appárso; comparir has compárvi or -si or -fi, compárso; otherwise they are like sparir, but they have in the present the additional forms: -páio, -páre, -páiono, -páia, -páiano.

164. **Dír**, *say*, dicêndo, díssi, dítto; dirò. Dír (formerly dicere) belongs really to the third conjugation: dicésti, -éva, -éssi.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.		PRES. SUBJ.
díco	diciámo	di'		dica
díci	díte	diciámo		dica
dice	dícono	díte		dícano

165. **Salfre**, *ascend*, salfi or sálsi, salíto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.
sálgo (salisco)	saliámo or sagliámo ²	sálga (salisca)
sáli (salisci)	salíte	sáiga (salisca)
sáie (salisce)	sálgono (saliscono)	sáiga (salisca)
		sálzano (saliscano)

166. **Venir**, *come*, vénni, veníto; verrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.
vêngo (vêgno)	veniámo ³	vênga (vêgna)
viêni	veníte	vênga (vêgna)
viêne	vêngono (vêgnono)	vênga (vêgna)
		vêngano (vêgnano)

167. **Udir**, *hear*, udfi, udito; udirò (udrò).

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.
ôdo	udiámo	ôda
ôdi	udíte	ôda
ôde	ôdono	ôda

¹ In all forms where o occurs, it may be replaced by o.

² Also salghiámo; venghiámo: popular forms.

168. **Uscire (escire), go out, uscii, uscito.**

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
esco	usciamò,	èscia	usciàmo
esci	uscite	èscia	usciàte
esce	èsceno	èscia	èscano

169. **Orfre, be born, ôrto. Defective. Rare.**

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS

93. Every irregular verb in this list is followed by a number referring to the table of Irregular Verbs arranged according to Conjugation. Obsolete defective verbs that present no irregularity have not been mentioned.

(a) Compound verbs have, in general, been excluded from this list, unless they differ in conjugation from the simple verbs from which they come (see 67, a). The commonest prefixes are: a- (corresponding in meaning to the preposition a); as- (=Latin *abs-*); co-, com-, con-, cor- (=prep. *con*); contra- (=prep. *cóntra*); de-, di- (=Lat. *de-*); dis- (=Lat. *dis-*); e-, es- (=Lat. *ex*); i-, im-, in-, ir- (=prep. *in*); o- (=Lat. *ob*); per- (=prep. *per*); pre- (=Lat. *prae-*); pro- (=Lat. *pro-*); r-, re-, ri- (=Lat. *re-*); s- (=Lat. *ex-* or *dis-*); so-, sos-, su- (=Lat. *sub*); sopra-, sopr-, sor- (=prep. *sópra*); sott-, sotto- (=prep. *sótto*); stra- (=Lat. *extra*); tra- (=prep. *tra*). After several of these prefixes the initial consonant of the simple verb is generally found doubled: a+cadére=accadére. S- is sometimes combined with con-, r- with a- or in-: scoscéndere, raccògliere, rincòrrere.

Accadére, *see* cadére, 7.

Afflìggere, 25.

Accéndere, 24.

Algere, 26.

Acclíudere, *see* chiúdere, 34.

Allúdere, 27.

Accòrgere, *see* scòrgere, 103.

Ancídere, *see* uccídere, 121.

Acquisíre *has only* acquisítio.

Andáre, 1.

Addúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.

Annéttere, *see* connétttere, 36.

- Antepórre, *see* pórre, 131.
 Antivedére, *p. p. only* antivedúito,
 otherwise like vedére, 10.
 Apparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.
 Appartenére, *see* tenrére, 17.
 Appéndere, *see* sospéndere, 109.
 Apríre, 149.
 Árdere, 28.
 Arrôgере, 29.
 Ascéndere, *see* scéndere, 100.
 Asciòlvе, *see* sciòlvе, 102.
 Ascóndere, *see* nascóndere, 78.
 Aspèrgere, *see* spèrgere, 113.
 Assalíre, *see* salíre, 165.
 Assídere, 30.
 Assístere, *see* esistere, 54.
 Assòlvе, 31.
 Assòrbere, 32.
 Assúmere, *see* consumere, 39.
 Avéllere, 33.
 Avére, 5.
 Bére, 127.
 Bévere, *see* bérе, 127.
 Cadére, 7.
 Calére, 23.
 Cédere, *generally reg., sometimes has p. abs.* céssi, *p. p.* céssо.
 Chiédere, 128.
 Chiúdere, 34.
 Cignere, *see* cíngere, 139.
 Cíngere, 139.
 Circoncídere, *see* decídere, 44.
 Cògliere, 134.
 Coincidere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Còlere, 35.
 Collúdere, *see* lúdere, 71.
 Comparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.
 Compétere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Còmpiere, *see* empíre, 160.
 Compíre, *see* empíre, 160.
 Comprimere, *see* esprimere, 57.
 Concédere, *see* succédere, 116.
 Conclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
 Concúttere, *see* discúttere, 47.
 Condúrre, 129.
 Connétttere, 36.
 Conóscere, 37.
 Conquídere, 38.
 Consistere, *see* esistere, 54.
 Constáre *is reg.*
 Construíre, *see* costruire, 154.
 Consúmere, 39.
 Conténdere, *see* têndere, 118.
 Contrastáre *is reg.*
 Controvértere, *see* vêrtere.
 Contúndere, 40.
 Convèrgere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Convertíre, 153.
 Copríre, 150.
 Còrre, *see* cògliere, 134.
 Còrrere, 41.
 Corrispóndere, *see* rispóndere, 97.
 Cospárgere, *see* spárgere, 111.
 Cospérgere, *see* spèrgere, 113.
 Costruíre, 154.
 Créscere, 42.
 Cucíre, 158.
 Cùdcere, 43.
 Cuopríre, *see* copríre, 150.
 Dáre, 3.
 Decídere, 44.
 Dedúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
 Delinquerе, *reg. verb, has no p. p., and its p. abs.*, delinquétti, *is rare.*
 Deprimere, *see* esprimere, 57.
 Desistere, *see* esistere, 54.
 Devòlvе, *see* vòlvе, 125.
 Diféndere, 45.
 Digeríre, 155.
 Dipéndere, *see* sospéndere, 109.
 Díre, 164.
 Dirígere, 46.
 Dirímere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Discéndere, *see* scéndere, 100.
 Discúttere, 47.
 Dispérgere, *see* spèrgere, 113.
 Dissòlvе, *see* sòlvе, 107.
 Dissuadére, *see* persuadére, 22.

- Distáre, *reg. in pres. of all moods, no pres. p., otherwise like stáre, 4.*
- Distinguere, 48.
- Distrúggere, *see strúggere, 115.*
- Divedére *has nothing but infin.*
- Divérgere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
- Dividere, 49.
- Dolére, 15.
- Dovére, 8.
- Eléggere, *see lèggere, 69.*
- Elídere, 50.
- Elúdere, 51.
- Émpiere, *see empire, 160.*
- Empíre, 160.
- Érgere, 52.
- Erigere, *see dirígere, 46.*
- Esauríre, 156.
- Escíre, *see uscíre, 168.*
- Esclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*
- Esfigere, 53.
- Esímere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
- Esistere, 54.
- Espéllere, 55.
- Esplòdere, 56.
- Esprímere, 57.
- Èssere, 126.
- Estínguere, *see distinguere, 48.*
- Evádere, *see invádere, 67.*
- Fáre, 2.
- Féndere, 58.
- Férvere, *reg. verb, has no p. p., and is rare except in the third pers. of the pres. ind. and past descr.*
- Figere, *see figgere, 59.*
- Figgere, 59.
- Fingere, 60.
- Fóndere, 61.
- Frángere, 62.
- Fríggere, 63.
- Genuflétttere, 64.
- Giacére, 11.
- Gire, *defect.: pres. giámo, gite; past descr. gíva or già, etc.; imper.*
- giámo, gite; *pres. subj. giámo, giáte; no pres. p.; rest reg.*
- Giúgnere, *see giúngere, 138.*
- Giúngere, 138.
- Illúdere, *see lúdere, 71.*
- Impéllere, *see espéllere, 55.*
- Impéndere, *see sospéndere, 109.*
- Imprímere, *see esprímere, 57.*
- Incidere, *see decidere, 44.*
- Inclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*
- Incútere, *see discútere, 47.*
- Indúrrre, *see condúrrre, 129.*
- Insistere, *see esistere, 54.*
- Instáre *is reg.*
- Instruire, *see construire, 154.*
- Inténdere, *see têndere, 118.*
- Intercédere, *see succédere, 116.*
- Intrídere, 65.
- Introdúrrre, *see condúrrre, 129.*
- Intrúdere, 66.
- Invádere, 67.
- Invalére, *p. p. only inválsio, otherwise like valére, 18.*
- Ire, *defect.: pres. ite; p. des. iva, etc.; p. abs. isti, iste, iro; fut. irémo, iréte, iránnio; imper. ite; past subj. isse, iste, issero; p. p. ito.*
- Istruire, *see costruire, 154.*
- Lécere, *see licere, 70.*
- Lédere, 68.
- Lèggere, 69.
- Lícere, 70.
- Lúcere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
- Lúdere, 71.
- Mantenére, *see tenére, 17.*
- Mérgere, 72.
- Méttere, 73.
- Mòlcere, 74.
- Mòrdere, 75.
- Moríre, 161.
- Múgnere, 140.
- Múngere, *see múgnere, 140.*
- Muôvere, 76.
- Násdere, 77.

- Nascóndere, 78.
 Negligere, 79.
 Nuócere, 130.
 Offéndere, 80.
 Offeríre, *see offríre*, 151.
 Offríre, 151.
 Opprimere, *see esprimere*, 57.
 Orfre, 169.
 Ostáre *is reg.*
 Osténdere, 81.
 Parére, 20.
 Percípere, 82.
 Percuótere, *see scuótere*, 105.
 Pérdere, 83.
 Permanére, *see rimanére*, 16.
 Persístere, *see esistere*, 54.
 Persuadére, 22.
 Piacére, 12.
 Piágneré, *see piángere*, 141.
 Piángere, 141.
 Pígnere, *see píngere*, 142.
 Pingere, 142.
 Pióvere, 84.
 Pórgere, 85.
 Pórre, 131.
 Pospórre, *see pórre*, 131.
 Possédere, *see sedére*, 9.
 Potére, 21.
 Precídere, *see decídere*, 44.
 Preclúdere, *see chiúdere*, 34.
 Predilígere, 86.
 Prémere *is reg.*
 Préndere, 87.
 Prestáre *is reg.*
 Presúmtere, *see consumere*, 39.
 Prevedére, *see vedére*, 10.
 Prodúrre, *see condúrre*, 129.
 Protéggere, 88.
Provvedére, fut. and past fut. uncontracted, otherwise like vedére, 10.
Prádere, reg. verb, has no p. p., and is used only in the third pers.
 Púgnere, *see púngere*, 143.
 Púngere, 143.
 Raccógliere, *see cògliere*, 134.
 Rádere, 89.
 Raggiúngere, *see giúngere*, 138.
 Recídere, *see decidere*, 44.
 Redímere, 90.
 Réggere, 91.
 Réndere, 92.
 Repéllere, *see espéllere*, 55.
 Reprímere, *see esprimere*, 57.
 Resistere, *see esistere*, 54.
 Restáre *is reg.*
 Ridere, 93.
 Ridúrre, *see condúrre*, 129.
 Riféttore, 94.
 Rifúlgere, 95.
 Rilúcere, 96.
 Rimanére, 16.
 Risólvere (*dissolve*), *see sòlvere*, 107.
 Risólvere (*determine*), *see assólvere*, 31.
 Rispondere, 97.
 Ristáre, *see stáre*, 4.
 Risúmtere, *see consumere*, 39.
 Ródere, 98.
 Rómperé, 99.
 Salíre, 165.
 Sapére, 6.
 Scégliere, 135.
 Scéndere, 100.
 Scérrre, *see scéigliere*, 135.
 Scíndere, 101.
 Scíogliere, 136.
 Scíolvere, 102.
 Scíorrre, *see sciogliere*, 136.
 Scomméttere, *see méttere*, 73.
 Scoprére, *see coprére*, 150.
 Scòrgere, 103.
 Scrívere, 104.
 Scuótere, 105.
 Sdrucíre, 159.
 Sdruscíre, *see sdrucíre*, 159.
 Sedére, 9.

Sedurre, *see condurre*, 129.
 Seguire, 162.
 Sepellire, *see seppellire*, 157.
 Seppellire, 157.
 Soffrire, *see soffrire*, 152.
 Soffolgere, 106.
 Soffrire, 152.
 Solére, 14.
 Sólvere, 107.
 Sopprimere, *see esprimere*, 57.
 Soprastáre, *see stáre*, 4.
 Sórgere, 108.
 Sospéndere, 109.
 Sostáre is *reg.*
 Sottostáre, *see stáre*, 4.
 Sovrastáre *see stáre*, 4.
 Spándere, 110.
 Spárgere, 111.
 Sparíre, 163.
 Spégnere, 144.
 Spéndere, 112.
 Spéngere, *see spégnere*, 144.
 Spérgere, 113.
 Spignere, *see spingere*, 145.
 Spingere, 145.
 Spórgere, 114.
 Stáre, 4.
 Strídere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Strígnere, *see stringere*, 146.
 Stringere, 146.
 Stríggere, 115.
 Subíre is *reg. pres. subisco.*
 Succédere, 116.
 Suggerere, 117.
 Sussistere, *see esistere*, 54.

Svéltere, *see véltere*, 133.
 Tacére, 13.
 Téndere (*trans.*), 118.
 Téndere (*intrans.*), *reg. verb, has no p. p.*
 Tenére, 17.
 Térgere, 119.
 Tígnere, *see tíngere*, 147.
 Tingere, 147.
 Tógliere, 137.
 Tórcere, 120.
 Tórrer, *see tógliere*, 137.
 Tradúrre, *see condúrre*, 129.
 Tráere, *see trárre*, 132.
 Transígere, *see esígere*, 53.
 Trárre, 132.
 Uccidere, 121.
 Udíre, 167.
 Úgnere, *see úngere*, 148.
 Üngere, 148.
 Uscíre, 168.
 Valére, 18.
 Vedére, 10.
 Véltere, 133.
 Veníre, 166.
 Vérre, *see véltere*, 133.
 Vértere, *reg. verb, is used only in the pres. and past descr.*
 Vilipéndere, *see sospéndere*, 109.
 Vincere, 122.
 Vivere, 123.
 Volére, 19.
 Völgere, 124.
 Völvere, 125.

LESSONS AND EXERCISES

LESSON 1. PRONUNCIATION

Study sections 1, 2, 3.

NOTE. — In this and in all other lessons the assignment of a section number means that the *whole* section, including all subdivisions, is to be studied, unless special directions to the contrary are given.

EXERCISE 1

1. *State the quality of the é (close or open) in each of these words, and pronounce each word:* te, tre, nè, sè, potè, è, diédi, fiêno, Siêna, désti, débito, Alfrédo, prêsto, mérito, Valêrio.
2. *State the quality of the o in each of these words, and pronounce each word:* fo, no, canterò, però, muôtre, suôna, nôi, ricôveri, Rôma, bôve, ôpera, Môdena.
3. *Pronounce:* abitûdine, alfabeto, Alfiêri, altrúi, Amêrica, Amâeto, andátevene, animáto, augurerâi, balenfo, benedífrono, benêvolo, bibliôfilo, cavaliêre, colúi, conservatôrio, contadíno, Costantinôpoli, costúi, crêduto, cúi, demoliréte, Demôstene, Doménico, dóve, éi, Emanuêle, erôe, esprimeréste, Faraóne, formidâbile, fúi, Galilêo, Goldóni, idêa, impermalísto, impêro, insubordináto, fo, línea, Lombardia, lúi, lunedì, maêstro, miêi, mfo, Nápoli, náufrago, nêutro, nobiltà, nuôra, ôde, oibò, onorévole, ortograffia, Orviêto, ôvest, Panamâ, Páolo, patâta, paúra, perdè, perpendícolo, personalità, pôi, pôvero, responsabilità, restituíti, rimanevâte, Rímini, Rómolo, Rôvere, Seráo, Severíno, suôi, Taormína, úmíle, úno, vendè, vói, volontà, vuôto.

LESSON 2. PRONUNCIATION (continued)

Study 4 [omitting (a), (b), (c), (d) under s], 5, 6, 7. Read (a), (b), (c) under s in 4, and 8.

EXERCISE 2

1. *Pronounce:* cáne, pánca, tásca, cóme, Páscoli, cúra, alcúni, scúdo, clásse, Têcla, crédo, sácro, ascrívere, che, chetáre, òche, pánchez, máschera, chi, chíno, báchi, pártchi, bôschi, chiúdo, richiámo, manchiámo, schiávo, íschia, Peschiéra, céna, celáre, vóce, viváce, Nocéra, élce, incêndio, ci, civile, Cimabúe, diêci, táci, Lucía, Médici, pôrci, Púlci, Vínci, ciárla, diciannôve, óncia, márcia, ciélo, spêcie, ciò, bácio, commérçio, Píncio, ciúrma, fanciúllo, accêndere, uccêllo, accidênte, piccino, fáccia, bôccia, táccio, picciône, Dúccio, acciúffo, ricciúto, scêna, násce, discêpolo, scibile, lásci, disciplinái, sciáme, pôscia, lasciò, mesciúto.

2. *Pronounce:* gála, tárga, sgarbáto, págo, válgo, sgómbro, gústo, auguráre, guárdia, Gûndo, sângue, glôria, anglomaniá, mágro, sgridáre, ghétto, pagherò, álghe, sghémbo, ghirlânda, ghinêa, Ghiberti, súghi, Inghiltêrra, ghiânda, ghiótto, paghiámo, Alighieri, ringhiéra, geláre, gênere, Gênova, agévole, Eugênio, stringêndo, Angêlico, sgeláre, gíro, agitáto, antología, Perugíno, piângi, cágia, Bôrgia, giórno, giovedì, Giovánni, adágio, mángio, giù, giústo, Giúlio, digiúno, ingiúria, fríggere, piágge, òggi, fuggíre, piággia, foggiáre, leggiéro, maggióre, solféggio, Réggio, aggiúnta, raggiustáre, mágli, bêgli, tígli, moglina, medáglia, pigliáre, Câgliari, móglie, cogliêndo, táglia, lúglia, pagliúcola, figliuôlo, gli, pugnáre, Campágna, Bolôgna, spúgne, mûgnere, compagnía, Mascágna, stágno, sógno, Foligno, ognúno, piagnucoláre.

3. *Pronounce the words in (a) under s on p. 3; then pronounce these words, in which the s has the sound of English z:* basílico, bríndisi, cásio, cáusa, confusióne, desérto, desináre, elemôsina, ênfasi.

4. *Pronounce these words, in which the z (or zz) is pronounced like ts:* grázie, òzio, Venêzia, Abrúzzi, altézza, Arézzo, mázzo, pôzzo, álzo, calzóni, ánzi, denúnzia, Firênze, Mónza, sênça, fôrza, márzo, zámpa, zío, zólfo; *then pronounce the words in (a) under z on p. 4.*

5. Pronounce: dèbbo, gabbáre, Lécco, pácco, addío, fréddo, affáre, góffo, béllo, Donatélico, commédia, sómma, fánno, Ravénna, appéna, tróppo, arrívó, têrra, éssa, Messína, métto, ôtto, avveníre.

LESSON 3. ARTICLES

Study 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15.

EXERCISE 3

1. State the gender and number of each of these combinations, as indicated by the form of the definite article: gli ábiti, il balcóne, i bambíni, la bárba, le immágini, gl' ímpeti, le scárpe, lo schérzo, gli zecchíni; cògli affári, del cámpo, súlla fáccia, ái ládri, dállo scöglio, négli státi, délle unióni.

2. Place the proper form of the definite article before each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine singular, those in (b) masculine plural, those in (c) feminine singular, those in (d) feminine plural]: (a) álbero, dênte, fátto, ímpero, sguárdo, spedále, uccélico, zíngaro. (b) álberi, dênti, fátti, ímpéri, sguárdi, spedáli, uccélli, zíngari. (c) ária, campána, evolúziona, ménte, ómbra, scéna, zampa. (d) árie, campáne, evolúzóni, ménti, ómbre, scéne, zampe.

3. Translate into Italian the prepositions and articles in these combinations [the nouns in (a) are masculine singular, those in (b) masculine plural, those in (c) feminine singular, those in (d) feminine plural]: (a) of the ánno, by the efféttö, to the gáatto, in the géstö, with the ídolo, on the leónë, with the quádro, in the scúdo, to the spírito, by the umóre, of the zappatöre. (b) of the anni, by the effétti, to the gátti, in the géstì, with the ídoli, on the leóni, with the quádri, in the scúdi, to the spíriti, by the umóri, of the zappatóri. (c) of the ácqua, by the estáte, to the nôtte, in the ópera, with the scála, on the távola. (d) of the ácque, by the estáti, to the nôtti, in the ópere, with the scále, on the távole.

4. Place the proper form of the indefinite article before each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine, those in (b) are feminine]: (a) idílio, nómë, océano, spéccchio, strído, teátro, uôvo, zóccolo. (b) età, maëstra, ónda, spína, úva, vâlle.

LESSON 4. NOUNS

Study 17-25 inclusive [omitting (a), (b) under 22, and (a), (b), (c), (d) under 23].

EXERCISE 4

1. *State the gender and number of each of these combinations:* gli animáli, néi caffè, la canzóne, cólla féde, del fucle, gl' ingégni, i lúpi, dágli onóri, le parole, il poëta, súlle questióni, lo schérzo, állo schiòppo.

2. *Give the plural of each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine, those in (b) are feminine]:* (a) bríndisi, cáne, castélllo, dêspota, dolóre, libro, lúme, maéstro, padróne, perícolo, podestà, problêma, uômo. (b) bellézza, bontà, capitále, fónte, lúna, móglie, origíne, pólvere, sérise, síntesi, têrra, vittória.

3. *Give the plural of each of these combinations:* l' ácqua, l' artista (*masculine*), l' ánno, l' azione (*feminine*), la barbárie, la béstia, il búe, il cavállo, la chiáve, il cuôre, la dáma, il dóno, l' erróre (*m.*), l' êstasi (*f.*), l' età, la fanciúlla, la felicità, la fêsta, il fráte, la gênte, il giurì, la gravità, l' idêa, l' inchiôstro, l' istânte (*m.*), il lavóro, la líra, la máno, il máre, la metrôpoli, il ministro, la morále, délla nazióne, all' oggettò, nell' opinióne (*f.*), délla padróna, dal palázzo, súlla pêlle, col prête, dal proféta, délla ragázza, al re, dal sânto, súllo scaffále, délla séte, nel sistêma, néllo státo, súlla superficie, dell' umóre (*m.*), nélla válle, sul vapóre, délla veritâ, cólla virtù.

LESSON 5. ÈSSERE

Study 53 (a) [omitting the compound tenses].

EXERCISE 5

1. *Identify (that is, state the person, number, and tense of) and translate these forms:* êrano, saréte, fúmmo, siámoo, essêndo, sarêbbe, sarémo, fu, sêi, saréste, éra, státo, sarà, siête, sarémmo, eraváte, saránno, sóno, fóste, sarêbbero, fúrono.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we¹ are, he will be, they were (*past descriptive*), they were (*past absolute*), I should be, she is, we were (*desc.*), they would be, I was (*abs.*), we shall be, we should be, being, it was (*abs.*), they will be, thou art, you are,² thou wast (*desc.*), you were (*desc.*), thou wast (*abs.*), you were (*abs.*), you will be, you would be, to be, been, let us be, be.³

¹ English subject pronouns are to be omitted in translation, until other directions are given.

² English verbs which have 'you' as subject are to be translated by second person plural forms, until other directions are given.

³ English imperatives without an expressed subject are to be translated by second person plural forms, until other directions are given.

VOCABULARY

giornale, m., <i>newspaper</i> .	ragazza, <i>girl</i> .
Giovanni, <i>John</i> .	Roma, <i>Rome</i> .
libro, <i>book</i> .	scrivania, <i>desk</i> .
pádre, m., <i>father</i> .	signóra, <i>lady</i> .
ragazzo, <i>boy</i> .	távola, <i>table</i> .
signóre, m., <i>gentleman</i> .	
uomo, <i>man</i> .	a, to, at, in. ¹
casa, <i>house, home</i> .	dománi, <i>tomorrow</i> .
città, <i>city</i> .	dóve, <i>where</i> .
donna, <i>woman</i> .	già, <i>already</i> .
Firénze, f., <i>Florence</i> .	iéri, <i>yesterday</i> .
mádre, f., <i>mother</i> .	lá, <i>there</i> .
Maria, <i>Mary</i> .	oggi, <i>today</i> .
Nápoli, f., <i>Naples</i> .	óra, <i>now</i> .
pórta, <i>door</i> .	quándo, <i>when</i> .
	qui, <i>here</i> .

¹ English 'in' is ordinarily to be translated by *in*, but before the name of a city it is to be translated by *a*.

3. *Study these sentences:*¹ 1. Il signóre è il pádre di Giovánni. 2. Dóve siéte óra? Sóno qui. 3. Quándo sarà cói signóri? 4. I libri

¹ The student should enable himself to translate the sentences, to read them aloud in Italian accurately and intelligently, and to translate them without reference to the book when they are read aloud by the instructor.

déi ragázzí érano súlla távola. 5. Dománi sarémo nélla cittá. 6. Sarà qui òggi? 7. La dónna è già álla pôrta délla cásá. 8. Óra è qui: dománi dóve sarà? 9. Il giornále è là, súlla scrivanía. 10. Iéri le signóre érano a Nápoli, òggi sóno a Rómá, dománi saránno a Firénze.

- 4. Translate into Italian:** 1. The lady is Mary's mother. 2. The girls will be here tomorrow. 3. The newspapers were¹ on the tables. 4. Where are the boy's books? Are they on the desk? 5. I shall be there with the men. 6. Were¹ you already at the door? 7. Would he be in the house now? 8. John's father is in the city. 9. When will you be in Naples? 10. Today they are here, tomorrow they'll be there.

¹ Use the past descriptive.

LESSON 6. ADJECTIVES

Study 26-34 inclusive. Learn the first twelve cardinal numerals, as given in 38.

EXERCISE 6

1. Give the feminine singular and the masculine and feminine plural of each of these adjectives: cattívo, fedéle, fôrte, róssó, sémplice, véro.

2. Insert the proper form of bêllo in each of these phrases: il — álbero, il — cappêllo, il — fanciúllo, il — ingégno, il — státó; i — álberi, i — cappêlli, i — fanciúlli, i — ingégni, i — státi.

3. Place the proper form of Sânto before each of these names: Agostíno, Cárló, Èlmo, Giovánni, Lorêndo.

4. Insert the proper form of grânde in each of these phrases: un — cappêllo, un — erróre, un — fuôco, un — ingégno, un — státó.

5. Insert the proper form of buôno in each of these phrases: un — amíco, un — cuôre, un — fanciúllo, un — ingégno, un — schiôppo.

VOCABULARY

cêntro, centre.
 fiôre, m., flower.
 fratêllo, brother.
 giardino, garden.
 têmpo, time, weather.

chiêsa, church.
 leziône, f., lesson.
 sorêlla, sister.
 stânza, room.
 via, street.

âltô, high, tall.
 bêllo, beautiful, pretty, handsome,
 fine.
 fáçile, easy.
 felice, happy.

francêse, French.
 gentle, gentle, polite, kind.
 giôvane, young.
 grânde, great, large, big.
 interessânte, interesting.
 italiâno, Italian.
 mólto, much; as adverb,
 much, very.
 píccolo, little, small.
 pôvero, poor.
 rôsso, red.
 rotôndo, round.

ci, here, there.¹
 dôpo, after, afterward.
 fôrse, perhaps.
 non,² not.

¹ *Ci* is used when the 'here' or 'there' is quite unemphatic, *qui* and *là* when the 'here' or 'there' bears some emphasis. *Ci* is called a conjunctive adverb, and its position is governed by special rules. Until other directions are given, it should be placed directly before the verb.

* Placed before the verb.

6. *Study these sentences:*¹ 1. Ci sóno déi bêi fiôri nel píccolo giardino. 2. Per i pôveri non è fáçile êssere felisci. 3. La távola rotônda éra nel cêntro délla stânza. 4. C' è quâlche giornâle francêse súlla scrivanía. 5. Le vîe di Nápoli sóno mólto interessânti. 6. Ôggi siête più felisci che iêri. 7. Le tre signôre francési êrano mólto gentili. 8. La chiêsa è più âltâ délla cása. 9. Il ragâzzo più giôvane è il fratêllo di María. 10. Domâni fôrse il têmpo sarâ migliôre.

¹ See the statement on p. 155.

7. *Translate into Italian:*¹ 1. The big red book is for John's brother. 2. He is the happiest of the boys. 3. The lesson for tomorrow will

¹ See the statement on p. 171.

be very easy. 4. The Italian newspaper was¹ on the round table.
 5. The largest house is as high as the church. 6. Mary's four sisters
 will not be here after tomorrow. 7. The boys were¹ more polite
 when they were younger. 8. Yesterday the weather was fine. 9.
 The prettiest flowers are in the garden. 10. There are some interesting
 streets in the centre of the city.²

¹ Use the past descriptive.

² Write this sentence in two ways, first using the partitive construction, then using *qualche*.

LESSON 7. AVÉRE

Study 53 (b) [omitting the compound tenses].

EXERCISE 7

1. Identify and translate: avéste, hánno, avréste, avrémo, ébbi,
 avévi, avêndo, avrà, avúto, avrèbbero, avévano; avréte, abbiámo,
 ébbero, hái, avránnno.

2. Translate into Italian: they will have, she had (*past abs.*), we should have, I had (*past desc.*), having, we have, thou wilt have, they have, let us have, you will have, we had (*abs.*), I should have.

3. Translate: fúrono, ha, fóste, aveváte, sarà, avéte, essêndo,
 ébbe, siáte, avrémmo, saréi, avémmo, saréste, avéva.

4. Translate into Italian: I am, I have, you are, you have, he is, he has, we were (*desc.*), we had (*desc.*), they were (*desc.*), they had (*desc.*), I was (*abs.*), I had (*abs.*), you were (*abs.*), you had (*abs.*), he was (*abs.*), he had (*abs.*), we shall be, we shall have, they would be, they would have.

VOCABULARY

álibero, *tree*.

ánnio, *year*.

giórno, *day*.

invérno, *winter*.

mése, m., *month*.

pránzo, *dinner*.

quádro, *picture*.

salôtto, *parlor*.

sóle, m., *sun, sunlight*.

téâtro, *theatre*.

<i>matita</i> , pencil.	<i>scuro</i> , dark.
<i>paziēnza</i> , patience.	<i>strētto</i> , narrow.
<i>pénna</i> , pen.	<i>véro</i> , true.
<i>rôsa</i> , rose.	
<i>settimâna</i> , week.	<i>benchè</i> , although. ¹
<i>stôria</i> , history.	<i>e</i> , and.
<i>câldo</i> , hot, warm.	<i>ma</i> , but.
<i>fréddo</i> , cold.	<i>o</i> , or.
<i>importânte</i> , important.	<i>pôi</i> , then.
<i>nuôvo</i> , new.	<i>prêsto</i> , soon, early.
<i>piêno</i> , full.	<i>sêmpre</i> , always.
	<i>soltânto</i> , only.

¹ The verb of the clause introduced by *benchè* is always in the subjunctive. *except in clause expressing an after thought*

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Avrânto soltânto tre o quâtro giórni a Firênze. 2. La chiêsa più interessânte éra in úna vía stréttâ e scûra. 3. Il giòvane avéva sêmpre qualche lìbro italiáno súlla scrivanía. 4. Benchè le stânze non siano grândi, sóno cálde e piêne di sóle. 5. Abbiânto per domâni dêlle leziôni móltô fâcili. 6. Non ho úna pénna, ma Giovânni ha dêlle matite. 7. Dôpo prânzo le signôre sarêbbero nel salôtto. 8. Pôi avrà dêlle tavole nuôve. 9. Il lìbro è úna stôria importânte déi teátri di Nápoli. 10. Óggi avrò déi giornâli francési e italiáni.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. The trees are much higher than the houses. 2. A year has twelve months, a month has four weeks, and a week has seven days. 3. They have a large house with a beautiful garden. 4. Have patience, they will be here soon. 5. Although the room is small, it will not be cold in the winter. 6. The most beautiful flowers were large red roses. 7. He had ten books on the desk, and seven or eight on the round table. 8. Have you a pen or a good pencil? 9. It is a pretty théâtre, it's true, but it isn't very large. 10. The churches of the city were very beautiful; they had many interesting pictures.

LESSON 8. DEMONSTRATIVES AND INTERROGATIVES

Study 42, 43.

EXERCISE 8

1. Place the proper form of *quello* before each of these nouns: álbero, cappélio, fanciúllo, ingérgo, státo, uccélio; álberi, cappelli, fanciúlli, ingégni, státi, uccelli.

2. Translate into Italian: who is it? whom have you there? of whom are-you-speaking (*parlate*)? what is it? what have you? of what are you speaking? what book is that? which book is that? whose book is that? what a beautiful book!

VOCABULARY

bigliéttó, *ticket*.
 cappélio, *hat*.
 denáro, *money*.
 fanciúllo, *child*.
 lavóro, *work*.
 númeró, *number*.
 occhiáli, m. pl., *glasses*.
 studénte, m., *student*.

 fóglia, *leaf*.
 gitá, *trip, excursion*.
 máno, f., *hand*.
 mattína, *morning*.
 Milánó, f.¹, *Milan*.
 poesía, *poem, poetry*.
 Venézia, *Venice*.

cérto, *certain*.
 córto, *short*.
 difficile, *difficult*.
 fortunáto, *fortunate*.
 necessário, *necessary*.
 ogni,² *every*.
 possibile, *possible*.
 prônto, *ready*.
 vérde, *green*.

cóme, *as, like*.
 finalménte, *finally, at last*.
 lunedí, *Mondays*.
 se, if;³
 sì, *yes*.
 tróppo, *too, too much*.

¹ Names of cities are regarded as feminine, whatever the ending.

² Invariable.

³ The verb of the clause introduced by *se* is present *indicative* if the tense is present, past *subjunctive* if the tense is past.

3. Study these sentences: 1. Quéste fóglie sóno piú bélle di quéi fíori. 2. Ho déi giornáli e déi lñbri: quéstí sóno per le signóre, quélli

per i signóri. 3. Ciò è possibile, ma non è certo. 4. Chi ha un pádre cóme quéllo è móltó fortunáto. 5. Chi è? È quéllo studénte francése. 6. Che cosa avéte in quélla máno? Déi bigliétti per una gítá a Venézia. 7. Quálé è il númeró délla cása di quel signóre? 8. Quálé lezíone éra la più diffíscile? 9. Quánti quádri in quel salóttó! 10. Di chi è quel cappélló vérde?

4. Translate into Italian: 1. What handsome children! Who are they? 2. Those poems are shorter than this one. 3. How much money would he have then? 4. At last he has what is necessary for the work. 5. These boys are here every morning. 6. Are you ready? Have you those tickets? 7. Which churches are more interesting, those of Venice or those of Milan? 8. That red is pretty. Yes, if it isn't too dark for the room. 9. How many will be here Monday? More than ten or twelve? 10. Whose glasses are these? Are they John's?

LESSON 9. THE FIRST CONJUGATION

Study 58, 59 [omitting (a), (b)], 62, 63 [omitting (a)–(d)], the first sentence of 75, and the first sentence of 77 (a).

EXERCISE 9

1. Identify and translate: parlò, parleréte, párli, parláste, parláte, parlámo, parleréi, parlerái, párlino, parlerà, parlái, parlávano.

2. Translate into Italian: I spoke, she would speak, we were speaking, I shall speak, they spoke, speak, let us speak, let him speak, speaking, they speak, we should speak, he spoke.

VOCABULARY

batíle, m., *trunk*.
 esáme, m., *examination*.
 forestière, m., *foreigner*.
 guánto, *glove*.
 moménto, *moment*.
 palázzo, *palace*.
 páne, m., *bread*.

paniére, m., *basket*.
 poëta, m., *poet*.
 chiáve, f., *key*.
 galléría, *gallery*.
 stazíone, f., *station*.
 universitá, *university*.

amare, to love.

aspettare, to wait, wait for.

cantare, to sing.

/ comprare, to buy.

\ costare, to cost.

desiderare, to desire.

/ entrare, to enter, go in, come in.

guardare, to look, look at, watch.

/ lavorare, to work.

passare, to pass.

telefonare, to telephone.

/ tornare, to come back, return.

\ trovare, to find.

visitare, to visit.

3. Translate: comprámo, costerébbe, entráva, tornerà, desideráte, trováste, entraránno, amerébbero, tórnai, trováto, trováti, comprámmo, guárda, guardái, amárono, trovándo, telefonò, lavoreréste, aspéttao, cántino.

4. Translate into Italian: it will cost, I waited, buying, they would watch, she came in, they returned, I should telephone, he loved, sing, we found, let him work.

5. Study these sentences: 1. Comprerò un baúle, se non còsta tróppo. 2. Quándo ci entrámmo, guardávano quel bél quádro dégli álberi. 3. Quánto còstano quéstí guánti? 4. Se non lavorásse, non passerébbe gli esámi. 5. Parláva délle poesie di quel poëta francése. 6. Lunedì visitámmo l' università di Nápoli. 7. Che còsa cantávano quéi ragázzi nélla vía? 8. Aspètti un moménto: non sóno prônto. 9. Non entrò nel palázzo, benchè avésse le chiávi. 10. Chi più ha, più desidera.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Look at¹ that girl with the basket full of roses. 2. They were waiting for that foreigner. 3. You will find some² interesting pictures in that gallery. 4. Did you telephone to that French gentleman? 5. With whom did you come back from the station? 6. I went in, although he was working. 7. Let's wait for¹ John: he will be here soon. 8. Let him buy the bread, and then comé back. 9. Where did she find those keys? 10. If I find the money, I'll telephone.

¹ Do not use a preposition after an Italian verb which may be in itself equivalent to an English verb and preposition.

² Use qualche.

LESSON 10. RELATIVES AND POSSESSIVES

Study 44 [omitting (a), (b), (c)], 45 [omitting (a)–(e)], 59 (a). Read 44 (a), (b), (c) 59 (b), 63 (a), (b), (c).

EXERCISE 10

1. Insert the proper relative pronoun in each of these phrases: il ragazzo — è qui, i libri — trovai, i ragazzi con — tornai, il libro di — parlo, i libri — sono sulla tavola, il ragazzo — cercavamo.

2. Translate into Italian: my garden, his house, our books, your pencils, their garden, my house, her books, our pencils, your garden, their house, my books, his pencils, our garden, your house, their books.

VOCABULARY

cugino, cousin.

mercato, market.

ombrello, umbrella.

pittore, m., painter.

romanzo, novel.

finestra, window.

fotografia, photograph.

mela, apple.

pera, pear.

testa, head.

giallo, yellow.

moderno, modern.

tutto, all.

ultimo, last, latest.

arrivare, to arrive.

bisognare,¹ to be necessary.

cercare, to seek, search, look for, try.

cominciare, to begin.

mangiare, to eat.

menare, to lead, take.

pagare, to pay.

portare, to carry, bring.

studiare, to study.

bene, well.

ecco, here is, here are, there is, there are.²

perchè, why, because.

stamane, this morning.

sùbito, at once.

¹ Impersonal.

² When 'there is,' 'there are,' are quite unemphatic (as in 'There are some pretty flowers in the garden'), or when the 'is' or 'are' is emphatic (as in 'There are men who don't believe it'), they are to be translated by *c'è* or *ci sono*. When the 'there' is emphatic (as in 'There is John') they are to be translated by *ecco*. 'Here is,' 'here are,' are always to be translated by *ecco*. *C'è* and *ci sono* correspond to the French *il y a*; *ecco* to the French *voici* and *voilà*.

3. Give all the forms of pagare in which an h is inserted.

4. Translate into Italian: I search, we search, let him search, I shall search; I pay, we pay, let him pay, I shall pay; I begin, we begin, let him begin, I shall begin; I eat, we eat, let him eat, I shall eat; I study, we study, let him study, I shall study.

5. Study these sentences: 1. È un uomo che trova subito quel che cerca. 2. C'erano all'ultima finestra due signori, uno dei quali era quel forestiere con cui parlai ieri. 3. Il palazzo che visitammo stamane è uno dei più interessanti della città. 4. La loro sorella portava sulla testa un gran paniere giallo pieno di mele e di pere. 5. Mangeremo quel che troveremo, e pagheremo bene. 6. Il quadro che guardavano nel salotto è di uno dei nostri migliori pittori italiani moderni. 7. Ecco quel signore. Perchè desidera parlare al vostri fratelli? 8. Che bei fiori! Sono tutti del vostro giardino? 9. La via più stretta è quella che mena dalla chiesa di San Giovanni al mercato. 10. Bisognava aspettare Maria, che cercava l'ombrello.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Who is the tall gentleman who arrived this morning? 2. Which of the lessons that you studied yesterday is the easiest? 3. This novel is more interesting than the one that he brought from the city. 4. My glasses are larger and rounder than his. 5. What are you looking for? Those tickets that I bought this morning. 6. Here is the umbrella I found at the door the day that you were here. Is it yours? 7. Whose is that poem of which they were speaking? 8. There are the men they were waiting for: why don't they begin? 9. Which of those three trunks is yours? This one, the largest. 10. Here is what he brought, — what is it? It's the latest photograph of my cousin.

LESSON 11. THE SECOND AND THIRD CONJUGATIONS

Study 60.

EXERCISE 11

1. Identify and translate: credè, crederéte, créda, crederò, credéste, credéte, credetti, crediamo, crederéi, credetttero, crederái, credéi, crederà, credévano, crederémo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I believed, she would believe, we were believing, believe, they believed, let us believe, let him believe, believing, they believe, we should believe, he believed, you believe.

VOCABULARY

bottone, m., button.	godere, to enjoy.
caffè, m., coffee.	temere, to fear, be afraid.
ferro, iron.	battere, to beat, strike.
lume, m., light.	cedere, to yield.
onore, m., honor.	combattere, to fight.
servitore, m., servant.	credere, to believe, think.
battaglia, battle.	perdere, to lose.
cosa, thing.	premere, to press.
frase, f., sentence.	ricevere, to receive, get.
preghiera, prayer, entreaty.	ripetere, to repeat.
salute, f., health.	ancora, yet, still, again, even.
torre, f., tower.	che, conjunction, that.
villa, villa.	fuorchè, except.
vista, sight, view.	meglio, better.
vita, life.	mentre, while.
volta, time. ¹	

¹ 'Time' is ordinarily to be translated by *tempo*; but when it has the sense of 'occasion' (as in 'three or four times') it is to be translated by *volta*.

3. *Translate:* battiamo, temeva, perderà, godete, ricevai, cedettero, combattè, premendo, ripeta, cederebbe, riceveste, goderanno, perderebbero, temano, perduto, perduti, tememmo, combatte, perderono, ricevono.

4. *Translate into Italian:* he will lose, I enjoyed, fearing, they would beat, she received, let them yield, they fought, repeat, they are pressing.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Oggi è felice: riceverà il denaro per quel quadro della signora coi guanti. 2. Benché combattessero bene, perdettero la battaglia, e molti perdettero la vita. 3. Avremo quel che bisogna, non temete. 4. Non ho ricevuto ancora le mie fotografie.

5. Ripetévanó ancóra quel che avévanó già ripetúto mólte vòlte. 6. Non ho studiáto la lezióne: iéri perdéi i miéi lsbri. 7. Se non tornásse, perderébbe ógni cosa. 8. Credéva che fósse mèglio êssere temúto che amáto. 9. Tútto è perdúto fuorchè l' onóre. 10. Bisogna bátttere il férro méntrè è cálido.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. She pressed a button, and the servant came in with the coffee. 2. The students had to (*a*) repeat the sentence three or four times. 3. The trees were losing the last red and yellow leaves. 4. If I receive the money, I'll telephone at once to my father. 5. Finally she came back and repeated that *ária* from the *Trovatore* (*m.*). 6. Although she is still young, she does not enjoy good health. 7. That room has only one small window, but it gets light from the parlor. 8. From their villa they enjoy a beautiful view of the towers of the city. 9. If he doesn't yield to their entreaties, he won't yield to mine. 10. They think that he is¹ even poorer than his cousin.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 12. CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS

Study 46, 47 [omitting 3 and (a)], 48 [omitting (a), (b), (d), (e), and (f), but including (c)].

EXERCISE 12

1. *Translate into Italian:* he finds me, he finds thee, he finds him, he finds her, he finds it (*m.*), he finds it (*f.*), he finds us, he finds you, he finds them (*m.*), he finds them (*f.*); I find myself, thou findest thyself, he finds himself, she finds herself, we find ourselves, you find yourself, you find yourselves, they (*m.*) find themselves, they (*f.*) find themselves; we find each other, you find each other, they find each other; to find him, finding him, let us find him, find him, do not find him, finding himself.

2. *Translate into Italian:* he speaks to me, he speaks to thee, he speaks to him, he speaks to her, he speaks to us, he speaks to you, he speaks to them (*m.*), he speaks to them (*f.*); I speak to myself, thou

speakest to thyself, he speaks to himself, she speaks to herself, we speak to ourselves, you speak to yourself, you speak to yourselves, they (*m.*) speak to themselves, they (*f.*) speak to themselves; we speak to each other, you speak to each other, they speak to each other; to speak to him, speaking to him, let us speak to him, let's not speak to him, speak to him, speaking to himself.

3. Translate: lo trovái, le párlano, mi parlerébbe, ripetételo, vi aspettávano, li compráste?, cediámo lóro, la guardávano?, gli telefonérò, si trovò, lo perdémmo, cercátela, le ricevérono, lo perdéttte, trovárvi, ci visiteránno, ci visiterémo, teméndoli, non le parláte, ci céda, vi telefondò, studiámolo, si cércano, comprátolo, li portáte.

4. Study these sentences: 1. Se non mi trováte qui, aspettátemi cói bigliétti álla pôrta délla stazióne. 2. Che côsa cérrca? Le chiávi di quel baúle. Le trovò iéri, pôi le perdéttte ancóra. 3. Si ripetévanó le frási délla lezióne. 4. Che ragázzo! Compráre cíngue méle, e mangiárle súbito! 5. Quánto gli costerébbe un cappêllo cóme quéllo? 6. Parláva cóme se ci fósse státo. 7. Quándo riceverò il denáro, vi pagherò. 8. Di che côsa le parláva nel salôtto? 9. Dóve ci méná? Álla chiêsa di cûi vi parlò quel pittóre. 10. Ecco quell' ombrêllo: teméva che lo avésse perdúto.

5. Translate into Italian: 1. When he came back from the market, he brought me some¹ apples. 2. When will she begin to (*a*) sing to them? 3. If you study the lesson, you will find it easy. 4. If he had them, he would bring them to my father. 5. When they came in, he was beginning to (*a*) eat it. 6. Here are the books I lost yesterday. Who found them? 7. We were here this morning, but she did not receive us. 8. I waited for them three days in Naples. 9. Now that you have it again, don't lose it. 10. Whose photograph is this? It's of my cousin. I received it yesterday.

¹ Use the partitive construction.

LESSON 13. CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS (continued)

Study 46-50 inclusive.

EXERCISE 13

1. *Translate each of these phrases in two ways:* gliélo pôrto, gliéla pôrto, gliéli pôrto, gliéle pôrto, gliéne párlolo, portáteglielo, parlátegliene.

2. *Translate into Italian:* he leads him to me, he leads him to thee, he leads him to him, he leads him to her, he leads him to us, he leads him to you, he leads him to them; he leads her to me, he leads her to thee, he leads her to him, he leads her to her, he leads her to us, he leads her to you, he leads her to them; he leads them (*m.*) to me, he leads them to thee, he leads them to him, he leads them to her, he leads them to us, he leads them to you, he leads them to them; he leads them (*f.*) to me, he leads them to thee, he leads them to him, he leads them to her, he leads them to us, he leads them to you, he leads them to them.

3. *Translate into Italian:* he speaks of it to me, he speaks of it to thee, he speaks of it to him, he speaks of it to her, he speaks of it to us, he speaks of it to you, he speaks of it to them.

4. *Translate into Italian:* I repeat it to myself, thou repeatest it to thyself, he repeats it to himself, she repeats it to herself, we repeat it to ourselves, you repeat it to yourself, you repeat it to yourselves, they repeat it to themselves; we repeat it to each other, you repeat it to each other, they repeat it to each other.

VOCABULARY

automôbile, m., *automobile.*

complimênto, *compliment.*

ritárdo, *delay;* in ritárdo, *late.*

trêno, *train.*

cortesia, *courtesy.*

lîra, *lira,* coin worth about 20 cents.

nôtte, f., *night.*

occasióne, f., *occasion.*

ôra, *hour.*

âltro, *other.*

stêssô, *same.*

vênti, *twenty.*

<i>chiamare, to call; come si chiama?</i>	<i>mostrare, to show.</i>
<i>what is the name of?</i>	<i>presentare, to present.</i>
<i>domandare, to ask.¹</i>	<i>prestare, to lend.</i>
<i>incontrare, to meet.</i>	<i>raccontare, to narrate, tell, tell about.¹</i>
<i>insegnare, to teach.</i>	<i>ringraziare, to thank.</i>
<i>lasciare, to leave, let.²</i>	<i>spiegare, to explain.</i>
<i>mandare, to send.</i>	

¹ The personal object of *domandare* or *raccontare* is indirect: *gli domandai*, 'I asked him'; *le raccontai*, 'I told her.'

² *Lasciare* is to be used in translating 'let' only when the idea is one of permission rather than one of command. For example, if 'let him speak' really means 'I command that he speak,' it is to be translated *parli*; if it really means 'allow him to speak,' it is to be translated *lasciatelo parlare*.

5. *Translate:* vi aspetto, ne cercava, ce lo cantarono, ne parlaste, non ne avrebbe, eccoli, portandoglielo, ripetéteglielo, gliene parlerò, bisogna portarglielo, eccola, ce li cedette, portiamogliene, me le mandò?, glielo prestai, ve lo spiegheranno, mandatemieli, glielo prestito, mi si presenta, gli si presentano, se lo presentano, lo mostrai loro, ve ne mandarono?, me lo spieghi, glielo presterete?

6. *Study these sentences:* 1. Quell' ombrello era il suo, e stamane glielo mandai. 2. Se non credesse quel che gli raccontammo, non glielo ripeterebbe. 3. Cominciava a domandargli perchè ne avesse parlato agli altri. 4. Ve lo spiegherà quando gli si presenterà una buona occasione. 5. Lo ringraziai della cortesia, e gli raccontai tutto. 6. Ogni volta che s' incontrano, si ripetono gli stessi complimenti. 7. Come si chiama quel giovane che v' insegna il francese? 8. Il treno era in ritardo, e l' aspettarono un' ora e più. 9. Ora lasciateli studiare; parleremo dopo. 10. Ho a pagare subito, e non ho una lira: Giovanni ha ricevuto oggi venti lire, non è vero?¹ Me ne presterebbe dieci?

¹ *non è vero?* 'hasn't he?'

7. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He is in the garden. Call him — they are looking for him. 2. He presented himself to me yesterday. I believe him even younger than the others. 3. Where are my pencils? didn't I leave them on the desk? 4. If he loses it, it will

cost him twenty *lire*. 5. It is necessary to¹ watch them day and night. 6. He has a French automobile, and he'll show it to us Monday. 7. Whose tickets are those? Are they your cousin's? Why don't you send them to him? 8. If I didn't believe what she told me, I wouldn't repeat it to you. 9. If he receives that money, he will pay me at once. 10. If she finds this lesson too difficult, he will explain it to her tomorrow.

¹ No preposition is used between *bisognare* and a dependent infinitive.

LESSON 14. THE FOURTH CONJUGATION

Study 61.

EXERCISE 14

1. *Identify and translate:* finì, finiréte, finiscono, finirò, finiste, finivano, finisi, finiranno, finiréi, finisci, finirono, finirái, finite, finirémo, finísca, finvfo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I finished, she would finish, we were finishing, he is finishing, finish, they finished, let us finish, finishing, they finish, we should finish, he finished, you finish, let him finish.

VOCABULARY

aútfinno, *autumn.*

applaudire, *to applaud.*

colré, m., *color.*

avvertire, *to warn.*

pericolo, *danger.*

capire, *to understand.*

spedále, m., *hospital.*

divertire, *to amuse.*

vénito, *wind.*

dormire, *to sleep.*

vestito, *dress.*

ferire, *to wound.*

cúra, *care.*

fuggire, *to flee.*

stóffa, *stuff, goods.*

garantire, *to guarantee.*

cattivo, *bad.*

partire, *to depart, leave.²*

chiáro, *clear, bright.*

preferire, *to prefer.*

tánto, *so much.¹*

restituire, *to give back.*

sentire, *to feel, hear.*

servire, *to serve.*

¹ 'So much' is to be translated by *tanto*; not by the separate words for 'so' and 'much.'

² When 'leave' is transitive, it is to be translated by *lasciare*; when intransitive, by *partire*.

alméno, at least.

invéce, instead.

nondiméno, nevertheless.

prima di, before.

sêenza, without.

stanôtte, last night.

staséra, this evening.

sûbito che, as soon as.¹

¹ 'As soon as' is to be translated by *sûbito che*; not by the separate words for 'as' and 'soon.'

3. Give the present indicative of each of these verbs: capire, divertire, dormire, fuggire, garantire, preferire.

4. Translate: dormiâmo, capirêbbe, serviva, avvertirà, applau-dite, garantiscano, divêrte, fuggirono, ferisce, servêndo, preferimmo, fuggii, avvertito, ferite, preferirêbbero, divêrtono, sentiste, servi-ranno, sênta, capscono.

5. Translate into Italian: he will amuse, I was sleeping, fleeing, they prefer, we understood, she served, they will applaud, you fled, I should guarantee, sleep.

6. Study these sentences: 1. Sûbito che me ne parlò, capii che l' avéva perduto. 2. Se ci s'èrve bêne, le pagherémo vénti lire la set-timâna. 3. Gliélo restituirâno sûbito che tórnâ. 4. L' avvertii che c' èra pericolo, ma partì nondiméno. 5. Se si divêrtono óra invéce di lavorare, domâni avrâno a lavorare invéce di divertîrsi. 6. Avéva cantâto mólto bêne, e tútti l' applaudivano. 7. Che vênto stanôtte! Lo sentiste? Sì, non dormii un' óra in tútta la nôtte. 8. Il ferito fu portâto állo spedále. 9. Partírono sêenza ringraziárci, benchè avéssimo cercâto tânto di divertirli. 10. Il mése cominciò con úna settimâna di bél têmpo — giórni chiâri e cálidi — ma finì con diéci giórni fréddi e scúri.

7. Translate into Italian: 1. If he doesn't guarantee it for a year at least, we won't buy it. 2. Although he heard them speak, he fled like the wind. 3. I explained it to him with much care, but he doesn't understand it yet. 4. If he is still sleeping, he won't finish that lesson. 5. The trees are losing the last leaves: the autumn is ending, and the winter is beginning. 6. Did you hear what he told them? 7. This room is warm, but in the parlor we felt the cold. 8. We shall leave this evening if the weather isn't

too bad. 9. What goods and what color does she prefer for the dress? 10. When will you finish that work? I shall not have the time to (*di*) finish it before Monday.

LESSON 15. DISJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS

Study 51.

EXERCISE 15

1. Translate into Italian, expressing the subject pronouns (use *lui*, *lei*, and *loro* for the third person): I am, thou hast, he speaks, she fears, we finish, you feel, they are, I had, thou didst enter, he yielded, she understood, we slept, you were, they had, I shall pay, thou wilt receive, he will guarantee, she will depart, we shall be, you will have, they will enter.

VOCABULARY

avvocato, *lawyer*.
bicchiére, *m.*, *glass*.
facchino, *porter*.
látte, *m.*, *milk*.
mèzzogórno, *noon*.

ária, *air*.
léttera, *letter*.
libertà, *liberty, freedom*.
móglie, *f.*, *wife*.
séggioia, *chair*.
valígia, *valise, bag*.
aiutáre, *to help*.
restáre, *to stay*.

accánto a, *beside*.
cóntero, cóntra di,¹ *against*.
davánti a, *in front of*.
diéstro, diétre a,¹ *behind*.
secóndo, *according to*.

avánti, *forward; come in*.²
così, *so*.
éh, eh.
mái, *ever, never; non . . . mái*,³
never.
nemméno, *non . . . nemméno*,³
not even.
perféttaménte, *perfectly*.
prima, *first*.

¹ The compound form is used before a disjunctive pronoun, the simple form in other cases.

² As an exclamation.

³ When *mái* (meaning 'never') or *nemméno* follows the verb, *non* is placed before the verb.

2. Study these sentences: 1. Portáte a quéstò signóre un caffè, e a me un bicchiére di látte. 2. Se lóro ce l' hánno raccontáto a noi, perchè non gliélo racconterémmo noi a lúi? 3. Felíci vói, che godéte quell' ária e quellá libertà, mentre fo résto qui in cittá a lavoráre cóme un facchíno! 4. Chi è? Sóno fo. Chi, io? Io, Giovánni. Siête vói, éh? avánti. 5. Se non gliélo spiéga bêne, gli è che non lo capisce bêne nemménó lúi. 6. A quel teátro me non mi ci troveréte mái piú. 7. Pôrta sêmpre con sè úna valigia tútta piêna di lîbri, ma pôi non ne guárda nemménó úno. 8. Lúi le parláva cóntro di me — e fo avévo lavoráto tânto per lúi! 9. Quândo entrái, lêi éra qui; accânto a lêi, Giovánni, che le parláva di sè stêssso, cóme sêmpre; e davânti a lúi, in quêsta sêggiola, la píccola sorêlla di lêi, che guardáva óra l' úno óra l' áltra. 10. Quândo lo perdéi, lóro mi aiutárono a cercárlo.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. They spoke of it to us, to you, and to him. 2. If it's he, call him, and show him that letter. 3. I myself telephoned to you, and asked you if he would arrive there before noon. 4. I think that you will receive it tomorrow. 5. If you were here with them, they would be perfectly happy. 6. If he stays, they will leave. 7. He was speaking to us, but we thought that he was speaking to them. 8. He and his cousin left before us, but we arrived there an hour before them. 9. According to him, she was staying at home because the weather was so bad. 10. The lawyer's wife came in first; then, behind her, the two girls; behind them, three porters with the trunks; and finally the lawyer himself.

LESSON 16. COMPOUND TENSES

Study the compound tenses in 53 (a) and 53 (b), 54 [omitting (c)–(h)], 55, 56, and the second sentence in 75.

EXERCISE 16

1. Identify and translate: ho trováto, avéva trováto, ébbe trováto, avrémo trováto, avréste trováto; sóno trováto, éra trováto, fu trováto, sarémo trováti, sarébbero trováti; sóno státo trováto, éra státo trováto, sarémo státi trováti, saréste státo trováto; sóno tornáto, éra

tornáto, fu tornáto, sarémo tornáti, saréste tornáti; mi sóno divertíto, si éra divertíto, ci sarémo divertíti, si sarébbero divertíti.

2. *Translate each of these phrases in six ways (as true reflexive, masculine and feminine; as substitute for the passive, masculine, feminine, and neuter; and as indefinite):* si presénta, si tróva, si servì, si perderà.

3. *Translate each of these phrases in three ways: (as true reflexive, as reciprocal, and as substitute for the passive):* si capíscono, si chiámano, si trovárono.

4. *Translate:* l' hánno avúto, c' éra státo, l' avrò cominciáto, mi avrébbe telefonáto, siéte ferító, vi siéte ferító, vi fúrono trováti, gli saránno restituíti, gli si restituiránno, sarémmo presentáti lóro, gli è spiegáto, gli si spiéga, gli è státo spiegáto, gli si è spiegáto, ci siámo spiegáti, ce lo siámo spiegáti, si éranó incontráti, siámo arriváti, vi fu mostráto, gli si presenterà, le éra státo raccontáto, le si éra raccontáto, si è presentáta, si sóno presentáte, li avrébbe aspettáti, ci ha capító, ci avévanó ringraziáti, si éra perdúto, éranó fuggítí, si è ferító, vi sóno arriváti, ci éranó státi mandáti, ci si éranó mandáti, vi avéva aiutáto, esséndo temúto, ci si spiéga, gliélo avévanó raccontáto, vi avrémmo ringraziáto.

5. *Translate into Italian:* we have found you, we have been there, they had had it, he will have eaten it, we should have sent it to you, he had¹ arrived, they are received,² they would have presented themselves to us, you would have found each other, they had¹ come in, he had left them, they would have¹ fled, it has been told to me.²

¹ Translate by the proper form of *Essere*.

² Translate this phrase in two ways.

6. *Study these sentences:* 1. Sóno cértó che se ci fósse státo cògli áltri, ce ne avrébbe parláto. 2. Perchè non ha cominciáto a cercáre quel che perdétté? 3. Quándo lóro saránno tornáti, noi sarémo già partíti. 4. Non li avrà finíti prima di dománi. 5. Non ha mái visitáto quel giardíno? Gliéne abbiámo parláto tánte volte. 6. Le sèggiole che mi si mostrávano éranó móltó bélle, e le avréi compráte se avéssi avúto il denáro. 7. Mi si éra raccontáto che lúi ci fósse státo, ma non l' avévo credúto. 8. Se hánno ricevúto la súa

lèttera, saranno già partiti per la città. 9. Lui aveva temuto che cedessero alle nostre preghiere. 10. Si mangia a mezzogiorno, e un' ora dopo si torna al lavoro.

7. *Translate into Italian:* 1. If he had had any, he would have sent us some. 2. Being called, I entered, and found myself where I had been the day before. 3. That bag that he had lost has been given back to him. 4. Let him explain to her why they hadn't telephoned to her. 5. I would have sent it to you if I had found it. 6. As soon as he had called them, he came back into the house. 7. When I arrived, they had¹ already left. 8. If they had begun them, they would have finished two or three of them. 9. He told me that he had¹ arrived there before the others. 10. I should have preferred a room with at least two windows.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

LESSON 17. REVIEW

EXERCISE 17

1. *Pronounce Exercise A on p. 150.*

2. *Give the plural of each of these combinations:* all' avvocato gentile, che bel salotto!, col loro fratello, dalla sua bella mano, dell' uomo felice, il gran baule, il mio cugino, il poeta francese, il suo bell' ombrello, la città moderna, la giovane moglie, l' altra finestra, lo stesso ragazzo, nell' università nuova, quale stanza?, quel buon padre, quello studente italiano, quel piccolo caffè, quel servitore fedele, questa lezione difficile, sulla torre alta.

3. *Translate:* se lui ci aiutasse, erano stati amati, aspettandole, l' avevamo, ne avrai, li hanno battuti, si capisce, lo cedemmo loro, lo comprano, si erano divertiti, ci entrarono, se loro non ci fossero, s' incontrarono, glielo mandai, lui lo mangerà, ve ne avevo parlato, chi li perdette?, che cosa preferirebbe lei?, se lo premesse, ci sarei restato, le telefonavo, lasciatolo, benché ci capisca, ve lo restituira, non l' hanno ricevuta, ripeteteglielo, vi sareste, glielo restituì, non gli cedano, siete chiamato, se lo spiegheranno, sono stati ricevuti, gli si è restituito, le sarà spiegato, si è perduto, ve lo manderanno,

gliéli avrèbbero mostráti, se vi avéssero sentito, la sérzano, benchè lo témano, kí li avvertí, non gliéne parláte, ce lo spiegárono, gli si érano presentáti.

4. Translate into Italian: there they are, we shall be there, if they should buy it, they would carry it to him, he will applaud them, I feared it, are they fighting there?, they are not fleeing, we should have gone in, they would have had it, did he have any?, although they had lost it, will they pay me?, I should prefer it, what has he received?, wait for us.

5. Study these proverbs:¹ 1. A ógni uccello suo nido è béllo. 2. Buôna compagnía, mèzza la vía. 3. Chi cérra, tróva. 4. Chi dòrme non píglia pésci. 5. Chi ha fiorini tróva cugíni. 6. Chi non lavóra non mangia. 7. Chi s' aiúta, il ciél l' aiúta. 8. Chi tardí arríva, málé all'oggia. 9. Gli assénti han sémpre tórto. 10. Il buôn víno non ha bisogno di frásca. 11. Il pásso più dúro è quéllo del' úscio. 12. La fáme non ha légge. 13. La fíne coróna l' ópera. 14. La nótte pôrta consiglio. 15. L' auróra indôra. 16. L' età pôrta sénno. 17. Méglio tardí che mái. 18. Non v' è rôsa sénza spíne. 19. Óggi a me, dománi a te. 20. Scópa nuôva scópa bêne.

¹ Many of the sentences from this point on contain words not given in the preceding vocabularies. See the statements on pp. 155 and 171.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Whose ideas are those? They are not yours, I hope. 2. If you hadn't told it to me myself, I shouldn't have believed it. 3. If you haven't the money, I'll lend it to you with pleasure. 4. I was afraid that you were¹ wrong, but according to my cousin's letter you are right. 5. How many times has he repeated it to you? 6. Whom are they calling? I thought that they were¹ all here. 7. He was studying there at the desk, and didn't even look at them when they came in. 8. Although there are not so many churches here, they are more interesting than those we visited yesterday. 9. Why didn't he let us go in? Probably because it was too early. 10. Who was it that telephoned to you? That gentleman to whom I telephoned this morning. He is going back tomorrow to Venice.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 18. THE MODERN POLITE FORM OF DIRECT ADDRESS

Study 52.

EXERCISE 18

1. *Translate in two ways (as third person feminine, and as used in direct address):* lèi è qui, con lèi, la chiamávano, chiámó lèi, le parlerò, è cérra, è restáta, lèi cantáva, dópo di lèi, la ringrázio, guar-dávano lèi, le telefoneréi, sarà fortunáta, si è divertísta.

2. *Translate in three ways (as third person masculine, as third person feminine, and as used in direct address):* éra là, l' aiuterò, gliélo mandái, si tróva, se lo ripête, párali, mi párali, è gentíle, il suo libro, studiáva, l' incontrái, gliéne ha parláto, si divérte, céda, si spiéghi, éra gióvane, i suoi occhiáli.

3. *Translate in two ways (as third person, and as used in direct address):* sóno qui, lóro éranó próniti, cóntro di lóro, li chiamáva, le incontrái, riceverò lóro, parlerò lóro, si tróvanó, se lo ripétono, párlino, mi párlino, sóno cérti, éranó entráte, il lóro tréno.

4. *Replace these phrases by the corresponding phrases in modern polite usage, supposing one person to be addressed:* saréte qui, vói ci capíte, secóndo vói, vi troverò, cercávo vói, vi applaudívanó, ve lo préstó, vi siéte ferító, ve lo ripetéste, guardáte, sentítemi, il vóstro ombrélló.

5. *Replace the phrases in section 4 by the corresponding phrases in modern polite usage, supposing two men to be addressed.*

NOTE. — In the remainder of this exercise, and in all the following exercises, use only the modern polite form of direct address, and suppose the English ‘you’ to be singular, unless there is some indication that it refers to more than one person.

6. *Translate into Italian:* you are working, you will sing, for you, I’m waiting for you, I will serve you, he will telephone to you, I was speaking to you, did he send it to you?, you were explaining yourself, did you repeat it to yourself?, stay, thank him, you are happy, you have returned, your brother.

7. Translate the first five sentences in Ex. 14, section 6, and the first five in Ex. 16, section 6, supposing them to be used in direct address.

8. Translate into Italian the first five sentences in Ex. 15, section 3, and the first five in Ex. 17, section 6, using the modern polite form of direct address.

LESSON 19. ANDÁRE AND FÁRE

Study 92 through 2 (Fare); also 48 (a), (b), (c), 54 (h), 56(b), 78(d).

EXERCISE 19

1. *Translate:* andò, andréte, vánno, andáste, va', éra andáto, ci andréi, váda, andávano, sóno andáti, vi andái, andávo, sarébbe andáta, vátene, si va.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we went, you¹ go, they will go, you went there, he will go, he has gone there, they are going away, it goes, we should have gone, go, she went away, let them go.

¹ Remember the directions given in the Note on p.123.

3. *Translate:* fáccia, facéste, fátto, facciámó, féceró, avéva fátto, farésti, fo, li féce, farà, lo fácciano, si fa, è fátto, lo si fa, fáteli entráre, la fa lèggere,¹ le fa lèggere la lèttera, gliéla fa lèggere, me lo féce trováre.

¹ Translate this phrase in two ways.

4. *Translate into Italian:* I did, he will do, they are making, doing, they would make, make, you made, we have made, let them make, they will do it, we made them, they are made, I'll have him sing, I'll have it sung, I'll have him sing it.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Mi fáccia il favóre di chiamárlo súbito. 2. Chi va piáno va sáno¹ e va lontáno. 3. Facciámó una partíta al biliárdo? . Óggi no, ho trôppo da fáre, fo. 4. Se lo pérde, gliélo faránno cercáre. 5. I suôi affári andrébbero mèglio se non amásse tánto il dólce far niênte. 6. Quândo lúi tornò da fáre il soldáto, lèi

¹ *sano*, 'safely.' Predicate adjectives are often adverbial in force.

si èra fatta sposa con un altro. 7. "Ah sì?" féce lui, "lasci fare a me." 8. Fa freddo: perchè non fanno un po' di fuoco qui? 9. Dopo faranno molte nuove conoscenze, che si chiameranno anche amicizie, ma le più vere saranno sempre le amicizie fatte in giovinezza. 10. Se n' andò in America, e subito si féce ricco, ma poi perdette ogni cosa, e se ne tornò povero povero¹ com' era andato.

¹ The repetition of a word serves to emphasize it.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. He goes to the city every day. 2. Go and see if they are here. 3. I had him make it so because the other one was made so. 4. If they had gone there yesterday, they would have found him there. 5. We had him carry it to the village. 6. If they do as he has done, they will do more honor to him than to themselves. 7. We make more of it than they, and ours is better than theirs. 8. He went away this morning, but he'll come back soon. 9. Let him go and find it and bring it to me here. 10. It's a pretty place: we go there every Sunday.

LESSON 20. DARE AND STARE

Study 92, 3 and 4; also 54 (c), (d).

EXERCISE 20

1. Translate: diède, daréte, dia, danno, dètte, darai, déste, diamo, diédero, dai, hánno dáto, me lo dávano, glielo darèbbe?, ce lo dia, diámogliene, ve ne daránno, se ne dà, l' avéva dáto lóro, dámmene, gli si è dáto.

2. Translate into Italian: I should give, I gave, you are giving, give, we have given, I was giving, they gave them to me, he gives himself to us, he gave them some, I had given it to her, will you give me some?, we should have given them to you.

3. Translate: staréste, stávano, stétte, stía, stéste, stánnو, stéttero, starèbbe, státe, sta', stémmo, stái, stíano, stíamo, starà, sto lavorando, stáva parlando, stáva per dirmelo.

4. *Translate into Italian:* he was standing, they would stand, I stood, let them stand, we stood, you are standing, stand, let us stand, he stood, they are calling, I was about to thank you.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Cós' hái in quélla máno? Dámmelo súbito. 2. Cóme sta? Beníssimo, grázie, e Léi? 3. Stáva per domandárgli perchè non se ne fósse andáto. 4. Per il Natále gli si diédero déi lóbri italiáni. 5. Chi dà préstó, è cóme se désse dúa vólte. 6. Stía atténto: non si fáccia mále. 7. Daránno il vótó a chi mèglio li pága. 8. Poverétta! Sta sémpré lì a cucíre. 9. Príma facéva l' ingegnérre, ma pòi si diéde állo stúdio délla filosofía. 10. Tútti gli facévano degl' inchíni profóndi, e gli dávano dell' illustríssimo.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He gave you two of them, and I gave you three. 2. They have¹ come back, but they are standing outside. 3. If it's his, give it to him. 4. They were explaining it to him when we came in. 5. Here you are at last: I was about to go and call you. 6. How much would you have given him? Not a cent. 7. They are giving a dinner this evening for that English writer. 8. Yesterday he was a little better, but today he's worse. 9. I thank you, sir: your words have given me the courage to (*dí*) continue. 10. Give them some² money, but don't let them come in.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

² Use the partitive construction.

LESSON 21. ARTICLES

Study 10-16 inclusive, 45 (a)-(e) inclusive.

EXERCISE 21

1. *Review Exercise 3, sections 2, 3, 4.*

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Nell' unità sta la fôrza. 2. Preferisce l' Ariðsto állo Spenser e Dánté állo Shakespeare. 3. Andámmo in Inghiltêrra cólla mádre, e quândo nós tornámmo lêi ci restò con úna súa cugína. 4. Éra órfano, ma un suo zio gli facéva da pádre. 5. Avéva i capélli néri e fólti; néri anche gli ócchi; néro l' ábito, néri

i guánti. 6. Il mèdico gli tocáva il pólso: la fêbbre montáva. 7. Si è fatto móltó mále; avrà a restáre a cásá úna settimána alméno. 8. Gli uomini più grándi hánno quási sémpre le maniêre sémplici. 9. È un gran poëta; chi lo néga párla da sciôccco. 10. Ha vendúto la cásá e ógni côsa, ed è partíto per gli Státi Uniti d' Amérîca.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. Habits make us what we are. 2. We are still in France, but we hope to (*di*) go to Italy this summer. 3. Mr. Róssi loves books, and spends almost all his time in his study; if he isn't well, it's his fault. 4. Poor Ghedíni was a friend of mine. 5. Last year Queen Margherita travelled through France. 6. He took off his hat and made us a low bow. 7. Venice is perhaps the most beautiful of the cities of Italy. 8. If he is an Italian, let him be worthy of his fatherland. 9. He is still very young, but he talks like a man. 10. Give him your handkerchief quick; he has cut his hand.

LESSON 22. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION

Read 64-67; study 92, 6-10.

EXERCISE 22

1. Translate: saprò, sèppe, sái, saprémmo, sánno, sapévo, cá-dono, cadrò, caddi, cadúto, cárde, cadrébbe, dobbiámo, dovétti, dévi, dovémmo, dovróno, dovréte, sedéi, siédono, sedéndo, sedéte, sedétte, sedéva, védâ, víde, vedrái, vísto, védano, vídero; l' avrémo sapúto, vi cárde, me lo déve, vi sedéva?, ce lo vedémmo, lo sèpperò, ci sarébbe cadúto, gliélo dobbiámo, ci sedétti, li vedrà.

2. Translate into Italian: we know, they knew, you had known, know, they fell, I was falling, we shall fall, you fell, he owes, we should owe, they owe, owing, he is sitting, they will sit, you were sitting, seated, we should see, let him see, I saw, let us see; did he know it?, they had fallen there, they owe it to her, they are sitting there, did they see us?

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Stávano insieme álla finêstra a guardáre la néve che cadéva lênta lênta. 2. Che búio! Non ci si véde¹ pûnto! 3. Il pôvero vêccchio stáva sedûto al cánto del camíno. 4. Vídero il lôro bambíno che giocava² cólle pistôle déllo zío. 5. Non so se Léi sâppia la triste notízia. 6. Si vedéva nélle súe manière un non so che di nuôvo e di stráno. 7. Mi hâranno dâto túutto; non mi si dêve più nûlla. 8. Cói pensieri che gli girâvano per la tésta non sapéva più in che móndo si fósse. 9. Il pâco che si sa, si sâppia bêne. 10. Non dimenticáte i cadúti per la pátria.

¹ *Non ci si véde*, 'One can't see.' There are several verbs that may assume the idea of possibility in the present and past descriptive tenses.

² *che giocava*, 'playing.' An Italian relative clause is often equivalent to an English participle.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Let's see where they are going. 2. He was standing there talking with his brother, when a brick fell on his head. 3. Did you see them speak to him? Do you know their names? 4. They will not know what we are doing. 5. See: they have given me some¹ gloves like yours. 6. I hope that tomorrow you will all know the lesson. 7. If I see him I'll give him the ten *lîre* I owe him. 8. He had him sit down beside the desk. 9. Were they not standing there when you saw them? 10. He owed him everything, yet he went away leaving him alone and sick.

¹ Use the partitive construction.

LESSON 23. NOUNS

Study 22, 23, 24, 25.

EXERCISE 23

1. *Review Exercise 4, sections 2 and 3.*

2. *Give the plural of each of these masculine nouns:* ágo, amíco, bácio, bôsco, bráccio, cántico, collêga, díto, díuca, equívoco, fígglio, fuôco, ginôcchio, guáio, luôgo, míglia, mônaco, nemíco, ôbbligo, ôcchio, páio, patriárca, stûdio, túrco, uôvo.

3. *Give the plural of each of these feminine nouns:* bibliotêca, côscia, fâbbrica, fáccia, frângia, fúga, giácca, léga, valânga, valígia.

4. Give the masculine and feminine plural of each of these adjectives: artístico, búio, cárico, ciêco, clássico, dóppio, fréscio, grígio, lárgo, lúngio, pôco, prôprio, simpático, vágô, vêcchio.

5. Study these sentences: 1. La ricchézza déi contadíni sta nélle bráccia. 2. Tornárono tútti cárichi di frútta e di confétti. 3. Si sentì tremáre le ginôccchia per la paúra. 4. E i mèdici, non gli dârno più speránza? 5. In quéi villaggi ci sóno moltíssimi ciêchi. 6. I suôi¹ lo crédono un buôn ragázzo; ma ha mólti vízi e pochíssime virtù. 7. Che c' è di nuôvo? Gli operái hâranno fâtto sciôpero. 8. Ha studiáto il tedesco dûe ánni, ed óra lo párla assái bêne. 9. Il súo aspêtto avéva qualche côsa di misterioso, quâsi di divíno. 10. Le lóro fâcce e manière hârnno un non so che di sémplice e di umâno che fa vedére che la lóro víta si fónda sul véro e non sul fâlso.

¹ *I subi*, 'His family.' The masculine plural possessives are often used in this way.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Yesterday morning they walked more than ten miles. 2. They hope that their old friends will arrive this evening. 3. We saw them with our own eyes. 4. The lakes are longer than they¹ are¹ broad. 5. He has finished his studies on the libraries of ancient times. 6. Give me two pairs of stockings. 7. They are very agreeable young men. 8. Her eyes were black as night, and her cheeks were white as snow. 9. He has lost two fingers of his right hand. 10. The monarchs of Milan were called dukes; those of Venice, doges; those of Rome, popes; and those of Naples, kings.

¹ Omit these words in translating.

LESSON 24. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 11-17.

EXERCISE 24

1. Translate: giácciono, giácque, giacêndo, piaceréi, piáce, piác-quero, táccia, táci, tacqui, suôle, sólito, solévano, dorrà, dólse, rimásero, rimânga, rimarréste, tiêne, terréte, ténne, tenúti, têngano,

teníamo; gli piáce,¹ gli piáccio, le piácciono, vi piacéva?, piácque lóro, gli duóle,¹ vi rimángano, c' è rimásta, vi saránno rimásti, li tenéva, teníamolo, l' avéva tenúto.

¹ The personal object of *piacere* or *dolere* is indirect.

2. Translate into Italian: he was lying, it lay, they please, you will please, they were silent, we shall be silent, they were wont, it grieves, remain, they remain, thou holdest, they would hold; it pleases me, I like it,¹ they please me, I like them, it pleased him, he liked it, she liked it, we liked it, they liked it, they have remained there, they are held, we should have held them.

¹ When 'like' has a noun or a pronoun as object, the sentence should be recast for translation into Italian by substituting 'please' for 'like,' and making the original object the subject and the original subject the object: 'I like it' = 'it pleases me.'

3. Study these sentences: 1. Gli piacerébbe móltó se Léi gliélo désse. 2. Arrivárono lunedí, e ci rimarránno alméno fino a doménica. 3. Non crédo che quel póstó gli piáccia:¹ non c' è niénte da fáre. 4. Iéri m' entrò úna spína nel piéde, e ancora mi duóle. 5. Tengo per férmo che un tále dóno non gli piacerà. 6. Facéva un gran fréddo; ma si tenéva vivo il fuóco, e si stáava al caminéttó. 7. È diffíscile piacérgli, e lúi non cérrca máí di piacére a nessúno. 8. Ha tánte buóne qualítà: peccáto che non sáppia tenér la língua. 9. Mi fáccia il piacére di fármelo vedére. 10. La nótte tacéva: non un suóno, non úna vóce; sólo si sentíva, da lontáno, il mormorio del fiúme.

¹ *pidccia*, 'will please.' The present subjunctive often has a future tense-value.

4. Translate into Italian: 1. It fell and lay three days on the ground. 2. He was sitting in the room where his brother lay sick. 3. Have you seen my new coat? how do you like it? 4. If they keep still, we shall not know where they have been. 5. I have been studying too much; my eyes are paining me. 6. If you don't like this one, I will give you another. 7. It would grieve him very much if they should go¹ away now. 8. The village lies at the foot of the mountain, near the river. 9. Don't go now: stay to dinner, and then let's go to the theatre. 10. He kept us in doubt up to the last moment.

¹ 'should go': use the past subjunctive.

LESSON 25. AUGMENTATIVES, DIMINUTIVES, AND NUMERALS

Study 35-40 inclusive.

EXERCISE 25

1. Pronounce and translate: cinquantatrè, settantaséi, novantadúe, cèntodiciassétte, dugéntoquarantòtto, quattrocéntottantúno, seicénto-trentanòve, novecéntosessantasétte, milletrecéntoventidúe, milleno-vecéntoquíndici, tremilaquarantacínque.

2. Read in Italian: 31, 77, 243, 854, 1265, 1321, 1492, 1621, 1775, 1915; Sisto IV, InnocéNZO VIII, AlessáNdro VI, Pio III, Giúlio II, Leóne X, Adriáno VI, Cleménte VII, Pio IX, Leóne XIII, Pio X, Benedéto XV.

3. Translate: sóno le tre, sóno le cíngue e diéci, sóno le diéci e un quárto; sóno le séi e mèzzo, sóno le nòve méno vénti, sóno le ótto méno un quárto, sóno le dúe méno dòdici.

4. Translate into Italian: it's four o'clock, it's 6:12, it's half past eight, it's 25 minutes of nine, it's six minutes of five; April 1, April 2, April 3, April 22.

5. Translate in terms of American money:¹ diéci centésimi, cinqúanta centésimi, úna líra e vénti centésimi, trentún sólido, dúe líre e quaránta, cíngue líre e mèzzo, sétte líre e cinqúanta, vénti líre, sessantadúe líre e quarantacínque centésimi, mísle líre.

¹ 100 centésimi = 1 líra = 20 cents; 5 centésimi = 1 sólido.

6. Translate in terms of Italian money: \$.05, \$.18, \$.25, \$.42, \$1.00, \$1.50, \$6.38, \$100.00.

7. Study these sentences: 1. La lèttera fu datáta "Róma, venerdì 15 febbräio 1823." 2. Lo fornì di úna ventína di líre, tröppo per chi le dàva, tróppo pôche per chi le ricevéva. 3. Il côsto totále sarèbbe di líre cinquantaséi e centésimi settantacínque. 4. Lúi allóra avéva ventiquáttro ánni, e lèi soltánto diciòtto. 5. Èrano in tutto quíndici bigliétti da diéci líre. 6. Nel quarantòtto combattè a Miláno cóntro gli Austríaci. 7. Ha pubblicáto or óra un volúme sulla pittúra del

Trecênto. 8. Vi andò néi prími giôrni del 1612, e vi rimáse fino a mèzzo il 1614. 9. A che óra párte il trêno? Álle quíndici e mèzzo, cioè álle tre e mèzzo dôpo mèzzogiórno. 10. La raccôlta più importânte délle poesie italiâne più antiche è il códice vaticâno 3793.

8. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They woke me at five o'clock. It was dark and cold, and it was snowing hard. 2. The sonnet consists of 14 lines, and each line of 11 syllables. 3. The 15th century and the 16th are the two centuries of the Renaissance in Italy. 4. He made him repeat it five times. 5. The work of Manzoni falls in the first half of the 19th century. 6. I gave him 30 lire, and he bought two pairs of shoes. 7. Seven months have 31 days, four 30, and one 28 or 29. 8. Would you do me the favor to (*dì*) lend me ten lire or so until Monday? 9. From the tower one saw thousands¹ and thousands of persons crowded in the streets and the squares. 10. Victor Emmanuel II was the first king of the Third Italy.

¹ Use *migliidio*.

LESSON 26. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 18-22; also 79 (b) 1.

EXERCISE 26

1. *Translate:* varrò, válse, válgono, valémmo, valévano, válsero, vògliono, vuòi, vorrà, volévo, vuòle, vorrëi, paíamo, párví, pári, parrémmo, párvero, parréte, potéi, pôssono, potêndo, potéte, potè, può, persuáda, persuáse, persuadévano, persuadiâmo, persuásó, persuádi; lo varráanno, l' hánno volúto, ci éra pársø, non avréste potúto, persuadételì, non lo valéva, vorráanno fárlo?, gli párvé, non si può, sóno státi persuási.

2. *Translate into Italian:* it would be worth, we are worth, it was worth, you were worth, they wished, I was wishing, we shall wish, you wished, it seems, we should seem, they seem, seeming, he can, they will be able, you were able, they can, we should persuade, let him persuade, I persuaded, let us persuade; will it

be worth it?, did they wish it?, it seemed to us, we have not been able, haven't they persuaded him?

3. Study these sentences: 1. Rimânga se può, ma váda se ha da studiare. 2. Quânto crêde che válzano quégli anêlli? 3. È difficile, lo so, ma côsa vuôle? fáccia túutto quéllo che potrà. 4. Avéva fátto cóme paréva mèglio a lúi. 5. La chiêsa sta più in álto: ci vuôle un' óra per arrivârci. Ôh allóra non vále la péna. 6. Chi non può fáre cóme vuôle, fáccia cóme può. 7. Non si può contentárlo: più ne ha e più ne vuole. 8. Dûe non basterâno: ce ne vogliono alménno quâttro. 9. Se potéssesse fármici quéstò piacére Le saréi mille vólte obbligáto. 10. Volére è potére.

4. Translate into Italian: 1. We shall not be able to persuade him. 2. They seem large, but they cannot be good. 3. If you wish it, they will stay with you. 4. I should not have thought that they were worth¹ so much. 5. They owe me 20 lire, and they are not willing to pay me. 6. I wanted to give it to you, but I couldn't. 7. My head aches so much that I can't study. 8. He's going away tomorrow, although he wants¹ to stay here. 9. I should like to speak to you about it; could you stay ten minutes or so? 10. It takes a brave man to (a) do a thing like that.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 27. AUXILIARY VERBS

Study 54, 57.

EXERCISE 27

1. Translate: dévo parlâre, dovévo parlâre, dovéi parlâre, dovrò parlâre, dovréi parlâre, ho dovúto parlâre, avévo dovúto parlâre, avrò dovúto parlâre, avrêi dovúto parlâre; pôsso parlâre, potévo parlâre, potéi parlâre, potrò parlâre, potrêi parlâre, ho potúto parlâre, avévo potúto parlâre, avrò potúto parlâre, avrêi potúto parlâre; voglio parlâre, volévo parlâre, vòlli parlâre, vorrò parlâre, vorrêi parlâre, ho volúto parlâre, avévo volúto parlâre, avrò volúto parlâre, avrêi volúto parlâre; gliélo avévano dovúto dáre, non avrémmo potúto persuadérlo, avréste volúto vedérli?, non éra

potúto entráre, avrèbbe dovúto finírló, avevámó volúto comprárne; stiámó per andárcene, rimásé tradító, va studiáto cosí, lo fécero portáre, bisognerébbé prestárglieli, hánno da cercárlo, non sapréi spiegárlo, non potémmo a méno di non tacérre.

2. Translate into Italian: they are to speak, we must speak, you were to speak, he had to speak, we shall have to speak, I ought to speak, he would have to speak, they have been obliged to speak, he must have spoken, she had had to speak, we shall have had to speak, he ought to have spoken, they were not able to speak, he may have spoken, they could have spoken, I should not have been able to speak, I might have spoken, will they be willing to speak?, he had been willing to speak.

3. Study these sentences: 1. Avéndo tánto da fáre in cittá, avréste dovúto partíre col tréno délle sétte e mèzzo. 2. Vòlle fáre úna vísita a cásá súa per vedére i suði, che non aveva vistí da tánto témpos. 3. A quel témpos non si potéva vedére tútto ciò che s' è vedúto dópo. 4. Láscliano la scuóla con l' ódio per le còse di cui si sóno dovúti occupáre e per gli autóri di cui hánno dovúto studiáre le ópere. 5. Non capisco cóme úna cosa símíle ábbia potúto accadére. 6. Dópo avér fatto tútti gli sfórzi possíbili, si è dovúto capitólare. 7. Non sarébbé potúto arriváre a Firénze néanche la séra. 8. Ti chiamerò préstó perchè dovrái andáre álla stazioné a piédi. 9. Avéva speráto che néllea cásá patérrna avrèbbe potúto godére alméno un pò' d' afféttó. 10. Mólto sa chi pôco sa, se tacér sa.

4. Study these sentences: 1. If I saw him, I should have to speak to him. 2. You ought to know when you will be able to bring it to us. 3. He would have had to keep still: he didn't know their names. 4. You must work if you want to please him. 5. They may find it, but I'm afraid that they have¹ left it in the city. 6. It grieves me, but I shall have to do it. 7. We ought to have kept still, but we couldn't help laughing. 8. He would like to know why they had to go away. 9. In what might I have the honor of serving you? 10. He always wanted to do what seemed best to him.

¹ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 28. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION

Study 92 (e), (f), (g) (on p. 85), 24-73 [omitting verbs marked Rare, and forms in parentheses].

EXERCISE 28

1. *Inflect the present tenses of affligere, conoscere, crescere, and leggere.*

2. *Translate:* ascendendo, accese, afflitto, alludono, ardéva, arderà, risolvette, chiude, chiuderemo, conosciuto, conosca, conobbero, corriamo, correvano, corsa, cresce, crescerà, cuoce, decida, decisi, difeso, difesse, dirigerò, discussero, distinti, divisero, esistito, esistono, esprimo, esprese, fitto, fingia, fingiamo, frigge, fuso, invásero, leggano, lessero, mettiamo, misi.

3. *Translate into Italian:* I light, he alluded, I will shut, he knew, run, grown, cooking, they decided, let us divide, it exists, he will express, fried, they will invade, let him read, they put.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Gli esprese il suo rincrescimento per quel che si era fatto. 2. Gli si leggeva la gioia nel viso. 3. Ci mise davanti¹ un mucchio di carte. 4. Mi lasci parlare; non chiuda il cuore alla pietà. 5. Lo conobbi a Firenze l'anno scorso. 6. Il fondo del romanzo è storico, ma vi è mescolato il finto col vero. 7. Più li conosce e più gli cresce l'amicizia per loro. 8. Le opinioni si divisero: alcuni applaudirono la sua azione, altri la biasimarono. 9. Nel Cinquecento Francesi e Spagnoli corsero tutta l'Italia. 10. Distinguiamo nel suo carattere quel che vi è di sincero² e quel che vi è di falso.

¹ *Ci mise davanti*, 'He put before us.' When the logical object of an Italian preposition is an unemphatic personal pronoun, the use of a disjunctive pronoun is often avoided by putting a conjunctive pronoun before the verb and treating the preposition as an adverb.

² *quel che vi è di sincero*, 'its elements of sincerity.'

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. It's the third time she has read that book. 2. Do you know my friend Mr. Ghedini? 3. He went to the door, shut it, and put the key in his pocket. 4. I lighted the other

light and ran into the room. 5. Do you want fried eggs? 6. What is she cooking now? 7. Do me the favor to (*di*) shut the door. Have those windows been shut? 8. Where did you put my hat? I have to go now, and I can't find it. 9. To whom was he alluding when he spoke of his enemies? 10. The schools will be closed from June to September.

LESSON 29. MOODS AND TENSES

Study 69-76 inclusive.

EXERCISE 29

1. *Study these sentences:* 1. Il lasciár le mûra délla città e il rivedére la cásá patêrna nel píccolo villággio fúrono sensazíoni piène di giòia. 2. Vedéndolo veníre con quéi lsbri in máno, n' éra móltó liéta, sperándo che gliéli avrébbe regaláti. 3. Partífrono pôco dôpo il levár del sóle, e tornárono sul far délla séra. 4. Non sapéva nè cóme fáre nè dóve andáre. 5. A continuáre così si córre il perícolo di pérdere tútto ciò che si è guadagnáto. 6. Credé di avér trováto quel che cercáva da tánto têmpo. 7. Quândo avrái gli ánni che ho fo, non sarái míca sì prônto a giudicáre gli áltri. 8. Finita la lezióne, tornárono a cásá, e trovárono il cugíno che li aspettáva. 9. Non ci avrébbe nûlla¹ da dáre a un pôvero ciêco? 10. Tórno pián piáno álla cásá; píccchio; nessuno rispónde; éntro; e ci trôvo — côsa crêde? 11. Inútile illúdersi; non c' è piû speránza. 12. L' êsser simpátici non bâsta, no; bisógna êssere útili a qualche côsa. 13. Rimarrái fino álle cíngue, non è véro? Non mi dfre di no. 14. Quândo arrivái a cásá, mio pádre non c' éra. Mía mádre si spaventò, perchè vedêndomi così pállido mi credéte maláto. 15. Auguráta la buôna nôtte al padróne, se n' andò in fréttta. 16. Lúi gli vendè l' ánima, e il diávolo gli promíse che per un cértô têmpo gli avrébbe ubbidító cóme a suo signôre. 17. Tornáti che fúrono, domandárono súbito da mangiare. 18. In quel vagóne è proibító fumáre. 19. Appéna mi víde, la súa espressióne, da irrequiêta che éra,² si féce minacciósa. 20. La stráda che ména a Sorrênto è un succêdersi contínuo di pûnti di vista stupêndi.

¹ *Non ci avrébbe nulla*, 'Haven't you anything?' The use of the past future gives the sentence an apologetic tone.

² *da irrequiêta che éra*, 'instead of anxious.'

- 2. Translate into Italian:** 1. Do you prefer traveling to studying? 2. I'll have it given back at once. 3. Their manners may be crude, but they are sincere. 4. Gratitude is to be praised. 5. You know, doubtless,¹ that my brother has returned. 6. When you arrive in (*a*) Florence, you will find at the hotel a letter from (*di*) my agent. 7. Have you not heard him spoken of? 8. I have been here for two months, working² in the libraries. 9. Where are they? They are there outside, waiting for³ you. 10. He ought to have spoken to you about it himself, instead of writing.

¹ Express this idea in the verb.

² Translate by *a* with the infinitive.

³ Use a relative clause instead of a participle.

LESSON 30. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 75-124 [omitting verbs marked Rare or Poetical, and forms in parentheses].

EXERCISE 30

- 1. Inflect the present tenses of muôvere and sôrgere.**

2. Translate: mórdono, mósse, moverà, násce, nácquero, nascósto, nascondévo, neglêtto, offendêndo, offési, pérso, perderébbe, piovéva, pioverà, prênda, préso, protêggono, protêssse, redênta, ráso, rendévano, rídi, rísero, rispónda, rispôsi, rótti, rúppero, scendémmo, scorgiámo, scríva, scríssi, scôsso, sórge, spargéva, spôrgono, succêsse, téso, tôrce, tôrse, ucciderà, víncio, vínsoro, vòlsi, volgerébbe.

3. Translate into Italian: they were moving, he was born, hide, we are losing, it is raining, let them take, he laughed, they answered, broken, write, he shook, they rise, she spent, it happens, it would kill, I shall conquer, let him live, they turned.

4. Study these sentences: 1. Se te li prêsto, quândo me li renderái? 2. La scodêlla gli cädde per têrra e si rúppe in tre pêzzi. 3. Sóli quéllo che gli vívono da prêsso sârno che égli è anche più buôno che

grande. 4. Scríva un pô' meglio; altriménti non potránnó leggere niénte. 5. Succésse una páusa, róttta finalménte da un grido di terróre. 6. Non si lásci vincere dall' ira. 7. Il códice fu scritto, páre, vêrso la fine del Trecénto. 8. È successo quéllo che pur trôppo non potéva non succédere. 9. L' Itália nácque cóme náscono tútte le nazióni nuôve, dall' energía déi méno che pôrta al destino l' inérzia déi più. 10. Bén perdúto è conosciúto.

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He put it on the table, but someone has moved it. 2. Let's stand under that tree while it rains. 3. If he had moved it, it would have fallen. 4. There the mountains rise from the waters of the lake. 5. Goldéni and Alfiéri lived in the 18th century. 6. They are all running: what has¹ happened? 7. He shook his head, smiling, and turned² toward the door. 8. When I spoke to him about it, he laughed, and did not answer me. 9. In what year was Dante born? 10. They don't think he will live³ if he remains here.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

² Put the proper reflexive pronoun before the verb.

³ Use the subjunctive.

LESSON 31. CONJUNCTIONS

Study 78.

EXERCISE 31

1. *Give the meanings of these conjunctions:* a méno che non, acciochè, affinchè, ánzi, avánti che, benchè, chè, dacchè, dáto che, dónde, dovúnque, finchè, finchè non, méntre, neánche, ossia, perchè (*with indicative*), perchè (*with subjunctive*), per quânto, poichè, prima che, purchè, pûre, qualúnque, quâsi, sebbêne, se non che, siccóme.

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Seguitò a filáre finchè il figlio del re non se ne fu andáto. 2. L' avrêbbe potúto fáre, purchè l' avésse volúto. 3. Môlti sóno e i difétti e i perícoli di úna tále decisióne. 4. I giórni passávano sêenza che il pádre gliéne parlásse. 5. Non l' avrêbbe mái sapúto, se non che le si spedì da Miláno un giornále cólla notízia. 6. Lo conoscévo néi giórni che êra qui a visitáre

la nônna. 7. Non ci aiûta pûnto, ânzi c' impedisce. 8. Le súe espressióni, per quânto fôssero fôrti, non êrano esagerâte. 9. Mi dispiâcque di non avérla vedûta príma che partisse. 10. Non voléva nemménno vedérlo, non che parlárgli.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. They were sitting in the parlor while I was writing the letters. 2. Who is going there today? Either he or I. 3. They received them as if they were old friends. 4. He remained at the window until he heard them knock. 5. We will pardon him provided he will promise to (*di*) give it back to us at once. 6. I found it without difficulty, although he had hidden it with the greatest care. 7. When you see him, do me the favor to (*di*) give him these tickets. 8. I should like to speak to him before he goes. 9. Since they are worth what they cost, why don't you buy them? 10. I sent you¹ here in order that you should study, not in order that you should waste my money.

¹ Use the second person singular in translating this sentence.

LESSON 32. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 127-133.

EXERCISE 32

1. Translate: bêvano, bêvve, berâ, avrêbbe bevûto, beviâmo, bée, chiêsto, chiêsi, chiedéte, chiederánno, chiêda, chiedévano, condurrêi, condôtto, condüssero, condúca, condúci, sóno condótti, nocéva, nuôcce, nôcque, póngga, pôsto, pôsi, poniâmo, porrâ, pône, traévano, trássero, trággono, trarrémo, avévano trátto, trágga.

2. Translate into Italian: they would drink, he was drinking, I drank, let him drink, let us ask, he will have asked, they asked, we were asking, I conducted, let them conduct, he has conducted, I was conducting, it will harm, they harmed, we put, put, they are putting, they will put, he dragged, we should drag, I have dragged.

3. Study these sentences: 1. Quândo avrà sêi ânni lo porrêmo a scuôla. 2. Se bevésse un pô' di quel víno, gli farêbbe bêne. 3. Il fumâre trôppo gli ha nociûto graveménte. 4. Non le sa negâre quel

che gli chiède.¹ 5. Sofrì lúnghi ánni di úna malattia di cuôre che finalménte lo trásse álla mórté. 6. Ho séte: dámme da bérè. 7. Vorrei chiéderle úna vacánza di pôchi giórni, finchè mi riméttà un pô' in salúte. 8. Finì col dársi per vínto, e col concédere tutto quánto gli éra richiesto. 9. Quésto mi ha indótto a riconóscere in lúi l'autóre délle méz disgrázie. 10. Tútte le stráde condúcono a Rómá.

¹ The personal object of *chiédere* is indirect.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Drink a little water. 2. They are putting it in the other corner of the room. 3. Clouds of smoke were rising, and they were dragging everything out of the house. 4. I put it there because I found it there: don't move it. 5. Go and ask him why he didn't read what I wrote. 6. If you stay to dinner, we'll take¹ you to the theatre this evening. 7. The house was placed so that one could see between the hills as far as the river. 8. If you had asked me for² it, I should have given it to you. 9. Then he drew his sword and took³ his place at the head of his company. 10. He put his hands on my shoulders and asked me if I had been a good boy.

¹ Use *mendre*. ² *Chiédere* means 'to ask for.' ³ Use *prêndere*.

LESSON 33. THE SUBJUNCTIVE

Study 77 through (f).

EXERCISE 33

1. *Study these sentences:* 1. Sénta: potrébbe prestármì per qualche giórno úna ventína di líre? 2. Bisognáva che ne trovássero un altro perféttaménte símile a quello che si éra perdúto. 3. Ci fáccia sapére quale difficoltà ci sía. 4. È il poëta più clássico e nondiménlo il più modérno che ábbia l'Itália. 5. Quánto mále ci ha fatto! Non l'avéssimo mái visto! 6. Se avésse úno che si prendéssesse cûra di lúi, anche lúi potrébbe far meglio. 7. Léggga, scríva, non sia mái ozioso, non chiéda mái a nessuno, non spéri che nel suo lavóro. 8. Non vi è più alcuno che créda álle lóro stórie. 9. Ti sia sêmpre nella ménte che il compiacérsi déi máli dégli áltri è crudeltà. 10. Se vuóle andáre,

se ne váda; per me, ci avréi piacére. 11. Èra un' idéa di cui parláva in égni conversazioné che riguardásse il súo avveníre. 12. Fóssi tu qui con me! Pur tróppo bisógna óra che tu rimánga in città. 13. Bádi di non parlármì più cosí; e básti l' avvísio per quéta vóltà. 14. Si mostrò prónito a tutto ciò che potésse piacére ai superióri. 15. Domandò álla sérva se si potésse parláre al padróne. 16. Divísero la città in séi párti, ed eléssero dódici cittadíni che la governássero. 17. Nessuno se ne meravígli: èra da aspettársi. 18. Benchè non vi sia niénte che ábbia l' ária di éssere esageráto, tutto il libro è úna terríbile accúsa. 19. Se ci va spésso, è perchè ci si mangia bène. 20. Parrébbe impossibile a chi non lo conoscésse per quell' uómo che è.

2. Translate into Italian: 1. If *he* were here, perhaps he would be able to give us a little light. 2. He asked me if I were really a count. 3. This is the first and only pleasure I have had since I have been here. 4. It would be enough to (*per*) convince one who had not sworn to remain in the dark. 5. They wanted to give her a name that should recall her aunt's affection. 6. Russia is the only country in (*di*) Europe that he hasn't visited. 7. They are things that happen often, although they seem impossible. 8. Did they ask you if you had read his last novel? 9. Wherever I go, that scene is ever before my eyes. 10. They had placed a guard at the only door by which he could have escaped.

LESSON 34. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 134-148.

EXERCISE 34

1. Translate: cõglie, cõlse, coglierémo, scélgla, scéltó, scegliévi, sciogliémmo, sciogliéndo, avrèbbe scídltó, tõlgono, torrà, torrêi, giungéte, giúnsero, sóno giúnti, piángi, piánse, piangerò, píngé, píngano, pingeránno, spégne, spénsse, spegnéva, spínga, avéva spínto, spínsero, stréttó, strñgono, stringémmo.

2. Translate into Italian: they gather, we gathered, I was choosing, let them choose, we have taken, I shall take, you are

weeping, I wept, they extinguish, we shall extinguish, you were pushing, I had pushed, we are bound, bind.

3. Study these sentences: 1. Il sole che calava tingéva di róssso le ácque del lágó. 2. La Cappélla Sistína fu dipinta da Michelángelo tra il 1508 e il 1512. 3. Gli afferrò la dêstra e gliéla strínse con fôrza, ma al ritiráre la máno la víde tinta di sângue. 4. Tútti quélly con cui éra stréttó d' amicizia se n' andárono, lasciándolo sólo sólo. 5. Non si sapéva se ríderne o piángerne; infâtti alcúni piánsero, sorridêndo però fra le lágrime. 6. Se si potéssero parlare úna vólta, le difficoltà sarébbero súbito sciolté. 7. Éran giúnti a un tal punto che bisognáva o víncere o pérder ógni cosa. 8. Stáva inginocchióni cólle máni giúnte in átto di preghiéra. 9. Gli tolse di máno il denáro sêenza nemménno ringraziárlo. 10. L' imperatôre, poëta égli stéssso, protéssese i poëti e li accôlse e onorò nélla súa côrte.

4. Translate into Italian: 1. Among all the employees they chose him as the most industrious. 2. Then they looked at each other, and began to weep. 3. Go and gather some¹ flowers for the vases in the parlor. 4. When we arrived, the sacristan was putting out the lights. 5. Take² those papers from the table and put them on the desk. 6. In ancient times cities were surrounded by walls and ditches. 7. He pushed me into (*a*) this business, and now he ought to help me. 8. They were crying like children; she was going from one to the other, trying to (*di*) comfort them. 9. We found ourselves compelled to (*a*) ask him for it. 10. He might have surrendered: he chose to (*di*) die.

¹ Use the partitive construction.

² Use *togliere*.

LESSON 35. PREPOSITIONS

Study 79.

EXERCISE 35

1. Give the meaning of these prepositions: accânto a, al di là di, attórno a, círca, cóntró, déntro di, diéstro, dirimpéttó a, dópo, eccéttó, fin da, fino a, fuôri di, innánzi, intórno a, lúngo, oltre, quânto a, rispêttó a, secôndo, sfno a, sótto, su, tra, tránné.

2. Study these sentences: 1. Se vuòl rimanére con noi, ha da fàre quel che voglio io. 2. Ora le ha comprato una macchina da cucire. 3. Ce lo giurò per quanto aveva di più caro. 4. Da allora in poi visse da buon cristiano. 5. Lo so per certo che oggi non gli hanno dato da mangiare. 6. Al di là del fiume si vedevano delle vecchie torri medioevali. 7. Ci si ammalavano a centinaia per giorno. 8. C'era una volta un bel fanciullo dai capelli biondi e dagli occhi azzurri, che aveva fra i dieci e i dodici anni. 9. Lui, poveretto, stava zitto a guardarmi, ed io gli parlai con un tono da fargli coraggio. 10. Alla porta della chiesa c'era una vecchia che accattava da chi entrava; il ragazzo andò da lei, e le diede metà del suo pane.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. They want to have (*fare*) lunch before the others. 2. You can't persuade him to vote against the government. 3. We'll be at your house in an hour and a half. 4. They will arrive on (*con*) the 5.20 train. 5. He went to France in 1872, and remained there for three or four years. 6. Go tell¹ them they'll have to do without me. 7. His arrival was greeted by all with an exclamation of surprise. 8. I begged my father to take² me to the city to see my cousins. 9. They have been living in Venice for six months. 10. You ought to do something for him instead of letting him suffer so.

¹ Use *dire*, the personal object of which is indirect.

² Use *mendare*.

LESSON 36. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION

Study 92, 149-163.

EXERCISE 36

1. Translate: áprono, aprì, sóno aperti, cópra, copérse, co-príte, offrímmo, offrirà, offérsi, soffrì, hánno sofférto, soffriré, costruivano, digerísce, esauríto, è státo sepólto, cucivo, émpiono, émpi, émpiere, muóia, morráno, è mórtio, ségui, segui, seguiré, spárve, sparíscono, sparirà.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we opened, they would open, cover, I covered, let us offer, he has offered, he is suffering, you will suffer, she was sewing, he died, I shall die, following, let us follow, it would disappear, they disappeared.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Se la tua pátria avrà bisogno di te, òfrile te stésso. 2. Le finéstre déllo stúdio si áprono all' êst. 3. Pôssa tu godére quant' fo ho sofferto e sôffro. 4. Tútti i figli le êrano mórti, l' úno dópo l' áltro, ed éra rimâsta sóla sóla al móndo. 5. Gli appárve in sórgno un fantásma che lo minacciáva di mórtre. 6. Lúi proseguíva il lavóro sêenza badare a ciò che facévano gli áltri. 7. Di quéstò si tratterà nel capítolo seguente. 8. Ha la spôsa rícca, ma morrébbe piuttôsto che chiéderle un sóldo. 9. Compiúti gli stúdi, féce un lúngo viággio per l' Európa. 10. Muôr gióvane colúi che al ciélo è cárto.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. If the window isn't open, do me the favor to open it. 2. He died last night at half past eleven. 3. Those are old customs that now are disappearing. 4. Let's offer them to her, and if she doesn't want them we'll keep them for ourselves. 5. The king is dead: long¹ live the king! 6. She covered her face with her hands and wept. 7. You have written a song that will not die. 8. I opened the window and called them, but they didn't hear me. 9. If I suffered as they have suffered, I should die. 10. They are building a theatre on the site of those old shops.

¹ Omit this word in translating.

LESSON 37. THE SUBJUNCTIVE (continued)

Study T7 (g), (h), (i).

EXERCISE 37

1. *Study these sentences:*¹ 1. Páre che se ne siano scordáti affátto. 2. Bádi che non gli fácciano mále! 3. Se le dispiáce che lo fácciano gli áltri, non lo fáccia lèi stésso. 4. Mi rincrésce che Léi ábbia dovûto partire sêenza vedérli. 5. Non permise però che finisse così. 6. Côsa

¹ In several of these sentences the *che* clause should be replaced, in translation, by an infinitive construction.

pênsi tu che ci sia da fâre? 7. Non sapéva che s' éra proibito che i forestieri visitássero la fortézza? 8. Non potrá venire domâni? Avrêi bisogno che tu mi aiutássi. 9. Il pônte par che ségni il punto in cui il fiume éntra nel lago. 10. Non si può non sospettare che l' ábbiano saputo. 11. Paréva ci fôssero dégli spíriti invisibili. 12. Téme che gli si pôssa tóigliere quel che ha guadagnato. 13. Vôglia il cielo che non venga un giorno in cui si pênta di non avérmi ascoltato. 14. Láscino ch' io gli párli ancora una volta prima che se ne váda! 15. Chi vuò che le cómperi, délle scárpe così? 16. Ho letto quélle páginas col più vivo interesse, e vorréi che le potéssero legger tutti. 17. Se vuole che gli si pôrti rispétto, dêve imparare a rispettare gli altri. 18. L' ho sentito negáre che la víta per sè stessa sia desiderabile. 19. Pagare e poi pagare, perchè i nôstri soldati vadano a morire nell' África, non si può pretendere che piaccia al pôpolo italiáno. 20. Non possiamo permétttere che certi punti del Mediterráneo siano presi ed occupati da colôro che un giorno potrébbero esserci nemici.

2. Translate into Italian: 1. I am surprised that you do not understand it. 2. I know they wanted me to stay¹ until tomorrow. 3. It seemed to us that they were afraid that someone would recognize them. 4. He begged them to give¹ him a little bread. 5. It may be believed that he has earned in this way more than 2000 lire. 6. He was ashamed that they should think that he had not been content. 7. Yesterday I heard that he was a little better. 8. Doesn't it seem to you that he is asking too much? 9. He ordered them all to be¹ silent. 10. I hope he'll give you all you want.

¹ Use a *che* clause, turning the preceding personal pronoun into a subject.

LESSON 38. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 164-168.

EXERCISE 38

1. Translate: díssero, dicéva, è státo détto, di', dícano, diréstti, salì, sálga, salíte, salívano, sálgo, salírà, viénii, verrà, vénne, sóno venúti, venga, verrêi, udírono, òde, udiránno, ésca, usciámo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* you say, he said, say, they are ascending, I ascended, let us ascend, they came, I shall come, she has come, they hear, hearing, we had heard, he is going out, they went out, I should go out.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Quândo uscî di câmera, mia madre, già alzâta, mi aspettâva per dírmi addio. 2. Che cosa vuôl díre quêsta parôla? 3. Ci dice che sôno venuti tutti, e che rimarrâno fino álle diêci. 4. I prezzi délle cárni sôno già saliti assai. 5. Morì benedicêndo i figli e i figli de' figli suôi. 6. Rifiutò nondimeno l' aiuto che gli veniva offerto. 7. Erano sempre sevéri con lui, senza mái dirne il perchè. 8. Pôi le vénne in mente che aveva promesso di restituiglierli il giorno dopo. 9. I fatti che siamo venuti narrando bástano a dimostrare la falsità dell' accusa. 10. Dímmi con chi práctichi e ti dirò chi sei.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They come and they disappear. Where do they all go? Tell me, do they all die? 2. I'm afraid they won't come if it rains. 3. If it's he, call him, and tell him I should like to speak to him. 4. He is much better now; he goes out almost every day. 5. Let them tell him to come at once. 6. They told me that he had arrived Monday. 7. They came; I heard them open the door; they went up; and then they disappeared. I went out, but they had gone away. 8. Did they tell you when they would come? 9. If he had told you that, what would you have done? 10. I came, I saw, I conquered.

LESSON 39. ADVERBS AND INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

Study 80-91 inclusive.

EXERCISE 39

1. *Give the meanings of these indefinite pronouns and adjectives:* alcuno, altri, altrui, ambedue, certo, chi, chicchessia, ciascheduno, ciascuno, meno, nessuno, nulla, ognuno, paréccoli, per quanto, qualchecosa, qualcuno, qualunque, si, un tale.

2. Study these sentences: 1. Senti qualchedúno che piangéva lì déntro. 2. Se fóssi Léi, gli scriveréi un' áltra vòlta, benchè non Le ábbia mái rispósto. 3. Sentiva un gran desidério di fáre qualcosa di stráno e di terrifible. 4. L' úno e l' áltro me n' hánno dátó paròla. 5. Ci andrémo insieme, non è véro? Non mi díca di no. 6. Còsa fái lì? O che vuòi bruciár la cásaa? 7. Ed écco che le appari súlla sòglia un non so che di biánco. 8. L' ha cambiáto túutto, ed óra sì che mi piáce! 9. Non si va in quel luôgo se non per vedére la fontána. 10. Quésto móndo è fáatto a scále, chi le scénde e chi le sále.

3. Translate into Italian: 1. Do you go there oftener now? What? Yes, every eight or ten days. 2. I shall be there too, day after tomorrow, and I shall stay the whole week. 3. We saw certain things there that we didn't like at all. 4. I should never have believed that they would both leave me. 5. Take care that no one sees you start. 6. Each of you ought to give him something. 7. One must respect the rights of others. 8. One can't say, though, that such a work isn't worth anything. 9. I have but two, but if you want one of them, here it is. 10. He must have known them well; he has lived there for several years.

LESSON 40. REVIEW

EXERCISE 40

1. Give the plural of each of the following combinations: l' ani-mále grígio, il mío bráccio, del caffè nuôvo, nell' éstasi (*fem.*), pôca facoltà, dália túa famíglia, la máno biánca, l' operáio erôico, l' orígine mística, quel páio, il gran pálco, col vêcchio pôrco, la radice profónda, l' última ríga, al bél rôgo, lo schérzo cômico, súllo scôglieo pittoréscu, il buôn síndaco, il telegrámma lúngu, il suo zío.

2. Translate: lo ápra, l' avrémmo, me lo chiésero, li còglie, condóttovi, ve lo conóbbe, gliélo dévono, ce lo día, dítele, líui li ha divisi, éccotelo, n' éisce, gliélo féce portáre, vi fóste, ci piánse, lo lèssi lóro, l' avéva mósso, mudiano lóro, vi nácque, offértoglielo, vi sarébbe pársu, dovréste piángerne, lo potémmo vedére, me lo rése, li rúpperu, si vorrébbe sapére, le scríssi, avrébbe dovúto

seguirli, ci stéste, l'avránno stréttó, lèi tâcque, lo têngá lèi, li tráe, ci vânno, éranó venúti, ci vídero, ci ha vissúto.

3. *Translate into Italian:* will you be there?, *they chose it, we had come, he was dying there, give it to him, will they go there?, he has been killed, do you know it?, do you know him?, they would have lost it, they ought to have opened it, he could not persuade him, it pleased him, I put it there, they made me read it, we shall remain there, it seemed to them, they have seen us, tell it to me, they wish it.*

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Mi rispôse di sì,¹ e che ci avrêbbe móltó piacére. 2. Lúi piangéva piangéva, e gli áltri stávano zítti a guardárlo. 3. Sedévanó attórno álla távolá, impaziénti che si servísse la colazioné. 4. Môrto, le párve assái più grânde e buôno che non le fósse mái pársó vívo. 5. Finalmènte riuscì a fârselo restituître. 6. Gli abitânti si rifugiávano su per i mónti, portândovi quel che avévan di mèglio.² 7. Nel succédersi dégli avveniménti in mèzzo ai quálí veníva innalzâto al sôglio, párve manifestársi la máno délla Provvidênça. 8. Prevedéva di doverse tornáre a cása, di lì a pôchi giôrni, pôvero com'éra venúto. 9. Che mólti di quéi têmi esistésserò nélla poesía più antîca, ci páre pienaménte dimostráto. 10. Se li pérdo, che sarà di me? 11. Le stáva davânti, quâsi aspettâsse che gli dicésse d' andársene. 12. Quéste pôche páginas pôste in princípio serviránno di introduzioné a tútto il lñbro. 13. Decise di sentire tranquillamente ciò che állo zio piacéssesse d' aggiungere. 14. Si trásse dal díto l' anêllo mágico, e se lo misé in bôcca. 15. Adêssò le spiegherò, mèglio ch'io non facessi allóra, che cosa vogliamo fâre. 16. Non pôsso non fárlo, nè vorréi, anche potêndo, non fárlo. 17. Úna societâ che si fórmî così dêve finíre con l' êsser compôsta di ribellî. 18. Parlerémo prima di lúi, non perchè égli sia il più antîco, ma perchè è il più importânté. 19. Non si éranó mái accôrti délle occhiâte di ammirazioné con cui lúi li guardáva. 20. Alcúni contadíni, credêndo che cercâsse déi tesôri, e persuási che avéssse già qualche cosa di preziôso in tásca, gli si avvicinárono per accertârsene.

¹ *di sì*, 'that he would.'

² *quel che avévan di mèglio*, 'the best of their belongings.'

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He told me that he had desired it for many years. 2. I should not have believed that you had spoken of it to him. 3. If I'm not mistaken, we shall be there in a few minutes. 4. I am surprised that they haven't called you yet. 5. I know him only by (*dī*) sight; I have seen him several times in the Public Gardens. 6. The prisoner has¹ escaped and has hidden himself in the wood; the peasants are protecting him. 7. I was sure of it, although her face did not betray any surprise. 8. Did they tell you when they would come to your house? 9. We could have given it to you, if we had known that you wanted it. 10. It isn't impossible that he has seen it, but I don't believe so.

¹ Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

LESSON 41. OLD AND POETIC FORMS

*Study section 3 (f) on p. 7, the second footnote on p. 11, the second footnote on p. 17, section 44 (a), the first footnote on p. 35, section 48 (c), the footnote on p. 39, section 63 (d), section 68, the forms given in section 92 in parentheses and footnotes, the verbs numbered 23 and 169, and those among nos. 24-125 that are marked Rare or Poetical; also the verbs *gire* and *íre* given on p. 94.*

EXERCISE 41

1. *Give the modern prose equivalents of:* lo giórno, i capéi, tái re, ne¹ párla, mel díce, nol crédo, sen va, amería, parlería, parláro, parlerébbono, parlóe, párlle, parlár, cómpro,² sentío, fénno, fésté, fáce, diéro, áve, avéa, aviéno, ággia, arà, éi, cággiiano, dée, dénno, il véggo, vólsi, puôte, pôrno, poría, ênno, súto, sête, fóra, fóro, fia, chiérgo, còrre, tòrre, piágne, végna.

¹ Do not regard this *ne* as meaning 'of it.'

² Do not regard this form as present indicative.

2. *Study these lines:*

1. Or fia ch' éi végna sólo? Áhi, mèglio fóra!
2. Udrássi allór chi puôte il ver narráre.
3. Môrte êmmi il gíre, e il rimanér m' è môrte.
4. Stávvi sêmpre — nól sái? — cui stárví lice.
5. Tôrmeli crédi? Chi diétti tal fôrza?

6. La pátria amâr; liêti per lêi moriro.
7. Il vêggio, o pármì, còi fratêi venire.
8. Qual fuggitivo non vorria mostrármì.
9. "O felíci costór!" paréane díre.
10. "Lasciár ti dêbbo" pôi sen gía cantândo.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES IN PRONUNCIATION

A

Acácia, accecáre, acciáio, acquaiuôlo, aggiúngere, áhi, allégro, ami-cízia, archibúgio, artigliería, bicchiére, bigliétto, Boccáccio, Boiárdo, bugía, búio, buôi, canzóne, Cardúcci, cascágini, Castiglióne, caval-lería, Cellíni, céncio, cêntottantôto, cérchio, Checchína, chiácchieri, chiaroscúro, Chiôggia, cicatríce, cíglia, cinquecênto, Civitavêccchia, cògliere, corággio, corridóio, costituzionále, crescêndo, cugíno, cuôcere, dolcézza, dóppio, dúnque, echegegiáre, faccione, fasciáre, fazzoléttò, fiôcchi, físcio, flôscio, Fogazzáro, Francésco, fruscio, fuorchè, gáio, ghiáccio, ghiáia, Ghirlandáio, giacíglia, ginôcchio, giôia, Giórgio, Gírgenti, giudízio, grígio, guái, guêrra, Guído Guinizêlli, hái, hánno, ho, ignôbile, incôgnito, inginocchiatóio, inscioglîbile, iridescênça, Itália, laggiù, larghézza, lenzuôlo, letteratûra, líscio, luccichìo, Machia-velli, menzógna, merciáio, Michelângelo Buonarrôti, minchionería, negôzio, Niccolò, noiáltri, occhiácci, ocêano, oréccchio, ossâ, Pagliácci, Palérmo, paziênsa, Petrárca, piázza, pieghevolezza, Pintoricchio, Poliziáno, Pollaiuôlo, Pozzuôli, puô, quâcquero, quaggiù, quégli, ricchézza, richiamámo, risuscitáre, ruôta, Sacchétti, sbêrcio, scé-gliere, schermísce, schérzo, schiamázzo, sciaguráto, sciôgliere, sciupacchiáre, scricchiolô, sdraiáto, sdrúcciolo, Sfôrza, sghêrro, Sicilia, singhiózzo, slânciano, squarciagôla, stizzísce, súdicio, tázza, tréccia, tribù, úggia, uguále, uôvo, usciámo, vêccchio, viâggio.

B

Un mío amíco raccontáva úna scêna curiosa álla quâle éra státo presénte in cása di un giûdice di páce in Miláno, mólti ánni fa. Lo avéva trováto tra dûe litigânti, úno déi quâli peroráva caldaménte la súa cáusa; e quândo costúi êbbe finito, il giûdice gli disse: "Avéte ragiône."

"Ma, signór giúdice," dísse súbito l' áltro, "lèi mi déve sentire anche me, prima di decidere."

"È tróppo giústo,"¹ rispóse il giúdice, "dite pur su,² che v' asclito atténtamente."

Allóra quéllo si misé con tanto più impégno a far valére la súa cáusa, e ci riuscì così bène che il giúdice gli dísse: "Avéte ragióne anche voi."

C' éra lì accánto³ un súo bambino di sette o otto ánni, il quále, giocándo pián piáno con non so qual balôcco, non avéva lasciáto di stáre anche atténto álla discussióne, e a quel púnito, alzando un visíno stupefátto, esclamò: "Ma bábbo, non può èssere che ábbiano ragióne tutt' e due."

"Hái ragióne anche tu," gli dísse il giúdice.

MANZONI.

¹ È troppo giusto, 'That's only fair.'

² dite pur su, 'go ahead.'

³ accánto, 'in the room with them.'

C

Che sia il Píncio nell' óra che sul ponente colór d'aráncio si dipínge la gigantésca ómbra di San Piétro e del Vaticáno, non c' è língua che pôssa díre. È un incánto, un' êstasi, un sôgno, è un confuso viavái d' imménsi pensieri, è un tumúltio di memòrie grandióse e di speránze arcáne, in cui la ménte si pérde, cóme in un máre sêenza confini. Guardándo il Giancolio e Mônte Mário, che stârno in fáccia, par di vedére nel fondo dell' angústa vallata passár silenziósi i sécoli fra le nébbie délla séra, e un brívido córre per le ôssa, cóme se da quel fondo si rizzássero tacitúrni e cúpi gli spétri dei grándi, che résero temúta e ságra álle gênti quéta têrra fatále. Quêsto píccolo spázio, che lo sguárdo abbráccia sêenza fatíca, è il púnito più stôrico di tutto il móndo. Tútta la civiltà antica s' è condensáta fra questi colli, e di qui, risaléndo il Tévere, s' è distesa a conquistár la maggiór párté délla têrra conoscíta. Di qui môssero gli esérciti invasóri, qui ne fúrono celebráti i triónfi, di qui si propagárono le léaggi e la língua che

fécero di gran párté déllo stermináto impêro un pôpulo sólo. Quândo pôi i vînti si ribellárono, la non vînta regína soggiogò cólle speránze di un' áltra víta tútti colóro che ricusávano il suo domínio in quéstâ; e in nôme di Crísto risollevò l' impêro cadûto. Poichè le fúrono strappâté di máno le ármi, regnò disarmáta: ricuperò con un áltero vessillo la coróna perdúta, nè fu méno grânde e potênte di príma. E l' emblêma di quéstâ stôria, nôdo déi têmpî anteriôri e déi succés-sivi, è là sótto gli ôcchi: un obelisco egiziáno, portáto in Róma dagl' imperatôri români e sormontáto dállea crôce, compêndia la stôria di túttâ la civiltâ.

GABÈLLI.

NOTE ON READING ITALIAN VERSE

In reading Italian verse the verbal stress is the same as in prose. There is no such artificial shifting of the stress as in Latin scansion.

Two adjacent vowels in the same word are usually to be pronounced as belonging to the same syllable, the voice gliding quickly from the first vowel to the second. They are however to be pronounced as belonging to separate syllables (1) when the first is *a*, *e*, or *o* and the second is stressed; (2) when the first of the two vowels is the last stressed vowel of the line; (3) in some other cases (there is one instance in Exercise E, line 4: *trionfale*).

Two vowels standing one at the end of a word and the other at the beginning of the next word and not separated by a mark of punctuation are usually to be pronounced, also, as belonging to the same syllable. (There are no exceptions in these exercises. Exceptions occur when the first of the two vowels is stressed or is immediately preceded by a stressed vowel, and in some other cases.) If the two vowels are different, the voice glides quickly from the first to the second; if they are identical, they are pronounced as a single long vowel.

Two adjacent vowels separated by a mark of pronunciation are to be pronounced as belonging to separate syllables; though as a matter of technical versification they are arbitrarily reckoned as belonging to the same syllable, unless they are of one of the types referred to as exceptional.

D

Lúngo la stráda védi su la siêpe
rídere a mázzi le vermíglie bácche:
nei cámpi aráti tórnano al presêpe
tárde le vácche.

Viên per la stráda un pôvero che il lênto
pásso tra fôglie strídule trascína:
nei cámpi intuôna una fanciúlla al vênto:

Fiore di spina! . . .

PÁSCOLI.

Line 1. *su la*: the prepositions which normally contract with a following definite article are in verse often uncontracted.

4. *tárde* is a predicate adjective used with adverbial force: 'slowly.'

intuôna: see section 59 (b).

8. *Fiore di spina*: these are the first words of a peasant song.

E

Liêvi e biánche a la plâga occidentále
Ván le núbi: a le víe ríde e su 'l fôro
Úmido il ciêlo, ed a l' umán lavôro
Salúta il sól, benírgno, trionfále.

Lêva in rôseo fulgór la cattedrále
Le mîlle gúglie biánche e i sânti d' ôro,
Osannândo irraggiáta: intôrno, il côro
Brûno de' fálchi ágita i grídi e l' ále.

Tál, pôi ch' amôr co 'l dólce ríso vía
Ráse le núbi che gravârmi tánto,
Si rilêva nel sól l' ânima mía,

E moltéplice a lêi sorríde il sânto
Ideál de la víta: è un' armonía
Ógni pensiero, ed ógni sênsô un cânto.

CARDÚCCI.

Line 2. *'l* is a form of *il* often used in verse.

10. *Ráse* is a past absolute used with the force of a present perfect:
'has swept.' — *gravârmi*: see section 68 (d).



ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

This vocabulary contains all Italian words appearing in exercise sections involving translation from the Italian and all words appearing in Exercises B-E on pp. 150-153, with the following exceptions: articles, cardinal and ordinal numerals, possessive and personal pronouns, and words occurring only in the following exercise sections: Ex. 28 sect. 2 Ex. 30 sect. 2, Ex. 31 sect. 1, Ex. 34 sect. 1, Ex. 35 sect. 1, Ex. 36 sect. 1, Ex. 39 sect. 1. The meanings of all words occurring in these sections are given in the portions of the Grammar assigned for the lessons in question. The irregular verb forms occurring in Exercises B-E (except the forms of *avere* and *essere*) are separately entered here.

The position of the secondary stress is indicated only in words in which it falls upon an open e or o.

Nouns ending in o are masculine and those ending in a are feminine, unless indication to the contrary is given.

A

a, to, toward, at, in, on, upon, for,
by, of; a fáre, doing, if one
does; al fáre, on doing, when
one does.

abbracciáre, to embrace.

abitante, m., inhabitant.

abito, coat.

accadére, to happen.

accánto, — a, beside.

accattáre, to beg.

accertársi, to make certain.

accogliere, to welcome.

accòrgersi di, to notice.

accúsa, accusation.

acqua, water.

addio, good-by.

adesso, now.

affáre, m., affair.

affátto, entirely.

afferráre, to seize.

afféttto, affection.

África, Africa.

aggiúngere, to add.

agitáre, to agitate, wave.

ah, ah; ah sì?, is that so?

áhi, ah.

aiutáre, to help.

áisito, help.

ála, wing.

álbero, tree.

alcúno, some; *pron.*, anyone.

alloggiáre, to lodge.

allóra, then; da — in pôi, thereafter.

alméno, at least.

áltó, high, tall; in —, high up.

altriménti, otherwise.

áltro, other; l' úno e l' —, both.

alzáre, to raise; alzátó, up.

amáre, to love, be fond of.

Améríca, America.

amicizíia, friendship.

amíco, friend.

ammalársi, to fall sick.

ammirázíone, *f.*, admiration.

amóre, m., love.

ánchez, also, too, even, at the same time.

ancóra, still, yet, again, even, more.

andáre , to go; andársene , to go off or away; va fatto così , it must be done so.	avánti , forward, come in.
anéollo , ring.	avére , to have, possess, hold; ho da , I have to, I must. Other idioms in which avére appears are registered only under the other words concerned.
angústo , narrow.	
ánima , soul.	
áanno , year; di díe ánni , two years old; avére díe ánni , to be two years old.	avveniménto , event.
anteriôre , former.	avvenire , to happen; <i>n. m.</i> , future.
antico , ancient, old.	avvertíre , to warn.
ánzi , even, rather, on the contrary.	avvicinársi a , to approach.
apparíre , to appear.	avvísio , warning.
appéna , scarcely, as soon as.	avvocáto , lawyer.
applaudíre , to applaud.	azíone , <i>f.</i> , action.
apríre, aprírsi , to open.	azzúrro , blue.
árâncio , orange.	
arfâre , to plough.	
arcâno , secret.	
ária , air; avér l' —, to seem.	
Ariôsto , Ariosto.	B
ármi , <i>f. pl.</i> , arms.	bâbbo , papa.
armonía , harmony.	bâcca , berry.
arrivâre , to arrive, get; — <i>a</i> , to reach.	badâre , to notice, take care, pay attention.
ascoltâre , to listen, listen to.	balôcco , toy.
aspettâre , to wait, wait for, expect.	bambino , child, small boy.
aspéttò , aspect, appearance.	bastâre , to be enough, suffice.
assái , enough, very, considerably, much.	battâglia , battle.
assênte , absent.	bâtttere , to beat, strike.
atténtaménto , attentively.	baûle , <i>m.</i> , trunk.
attênto , attentive, careful.	bêllo , beautiful, fair, handsome, pretty, fine.
âtto , act, attitude.	benchè , although.
attórno , — <i>a</i> , around.	bêne , well; <i>n. m.</i> , good thing, happiness; far —, to do good.
augurâre , to wish.	benedíre , to bless.
aurôra , dawn.	benísgno , benign.
austriaco , Austrian.	beníssimo , very well.
automôbile , <i>m.</i> , automobile.	bére , to drink.
autôre , <i>m.</i> , author.	biánco , white.
autúnno , autumn.	biasimâre , to blame, condemn.

bisognare, to be necessary.
 bisogno, need; **avér — di**, to need.
 bocca, mouth.
 bottone, *m.*, button.
 braccio, arm.
 brivido, shudder.
 bruciare, to burn.
 bruno, brown, dark.
 buio, dark; *n.*, darkness.
 buono, good.

C

cadere, to fall.
 caffè, *m.*, coffee.
 calare, to sink, set.
 caldaménte, warmly, eagerly.
 caldo, hot, warm.
 cambiare, to change.
 cámara, room.
 caminéto, fireplace.
 camino, chimney.
 campo, field.
 cantare, to sing.
 canto (1), song.
 canto (2), corner.
 capello, hair.
 capire, to understand.
 capitolare, to capitulate, surrender.
 capitolo, chapter.
 cappella, chapel.
 cappello, hat.
 carattere, *m.*, character.
 carico, laden.
 carne, *f.*, meat.
 caro, dear.
 carta, paper.
 casa, house, home.
 cattedrale, *f.*, cathedral.
 cattivo, bad.
 causa, cause, case.

cedere, to yield.
 celebrare, to celebrate.
 centesimo, centime.
 centinaio, hundred.
 centro, centre.
 cercare, to seek, search, look for, try.
 certo, certain; per —, for a certainty.
che, conj., that, because, and, than; fatto — ebbe, when he had made; ecco —, suddenly; non —, to say nothing of; se non —, if . . . not, but; non . . . —, only; poi —, when; sì — è buono, it's very good indeed; o —, used without translatable force to introduce a question.
che, pron., what, what a, who, which, that, when; — cosa, what; ciò —, quello —, what, that; un non so — di buono, something good, a certain goodness.
chi, who, he who, one who, if anyone; — . . . —, some . . . others; di —, whose.
 chiamare, to call; come si chama?, what is the name of?
 chiaro, clear, bright.
 chiave, *f.*, key.
 chiedere, to ask.
 chiesa, church.
 chiudere, to close, shut.
 ci, here, there, in it; often pleonastic.
 cieco, blind; *n.*, blind man.
 cielo, sky, heaven.
 ciò, that; — che, what, that.
 cioè, that is.

città, city.	conversazione, <i>f.</i> , conversation.
cittadino, citizen.	coraggio, courage; da far —, encouraging.
civiltà, civilization.	côro, choir.
classico, classic.	corôna, crown.
co 'l, poetic, — col.	coronare, to crown.
côdice, <i>m.</i> , manuscript.	côrrere, to run, overrun.
côgliere, to gather.	côrte, <i>f.</i> , court.
colaziône, <i>f.</i> , lunch.	cortesia, courtesy.
côlle, <i>m.</i> , hill.	côrto, short.
colôre, <i>m.</i> , color; — d' arâncio, orange-colored.	côsa, thing, what; che —, what; ha qualche — di buôno, there is something good about it.
colôro, those.	côsi, so, such.
colûi, he.	costare, to cost.
combattere, to fight.	côsto, cost.
côme, how, as, like.	côstoro, they.
cominciare, to begin.	costûi, he.
compagnia, company.	crédere, to believe, think.
compendiare, to sum up.	crêscere, to grow, increase.
compiacérsi, to take pleasure.	cristiano, Christian.
compire, to complete, finish.	Cristo, Christ.
complimênto, compliment.	crôce, <i>f.</i> , cross.
compôrre, to compose.	crudeltà, cruelty.
comprâre, to buy.	cucire, to sew; máquina da —, sewing-machine.
con, with, by, in, on, to.	cugina, cousin.
concêdere, to concede, grant.	cugino, cousin.
condensare, to condense, concen-	cui, whom, which, to which, he to whom.
trate.	cuôre, <i>m.</i> , heart.
condurre, to lead.	cupo, gloomy.
confetti, <i>m. pl.</i> , candy.	cúra, care.
confine, <i>m.</i> , limit.	curioso, curious.
confondere, to confuse.	
conoscênça, acquaintance.	
conôscere, to know, make the acquaintance of, recognize.	
conquistare, to conquer.	D
consiglio, counsel.	
contadino, peasant.	da, from, by, for, with, to, of, as, like, such as to; da lontano, in the distance; da pêrso, near;
contentare, to content, satisfy.	da mangiare, something or anything to eat.
continuare, to continue.	
continuo, continual.	
côntro, — di, against.	

Dânte, <i>m.</i> , Dante.	divertire, to divert, amuse.
dâre, to give, devote; — del, to call; dârsi per vinto, to give in.	dividere, to divide.
datâre, to date.	divino, divine.
davânti, — a, before, in front of.	dôlce, sweet.
decidere, to decide.	dolére, to pain.
decisiône, <i>f.</i> , decision.	domandâre, to ask, ask for.
denâro, money.	domâni, tomorrow.
dêntro, within, in.	doménica, Sunday.
desiderâbile, desirable.	dominio, dominion.
desiderâre, to desire.	dôrta, woman.
desidêrio, desire.	dôno, gift.
destino, destiny.	dôpo, after, afterward, since.
dêstra, right hand, right.	dormire, to sleep.
dêve, <i>3rd sing. pres. ind. of dovére.</i>	dôve, where.
di, of, about, with, from, by, in, to, than, as; dâre del, to call; dfre di sì, to say 'yes'; al di là di, beyond; del pâne, some bread.	dovére, to owe, be obliged; dêvo, I am to, I have to, I must; dovrâi, I ought to.
diâvolo, devil.	dâro, hard.
dîetro, — a, behind.	
difetto, defect.	
dificile, difficult.	
difficoltà, difficulty, trouble.	
dimenticâre, to forget.	E
dimostrâre, to demonstrate, prove.	e, and, both; le dâie e diâci, ten minutes past two; più . . . e più, the more . . . the more.
dipingere, to paint.	ecco, here is, there is; — che, suddenly.
dîre, to say, tell; — di sì, to say 'yes'; volér —, to mean.	ed, and.
disarmâto, unarmed.	egiziâno, Egyptian.
discussiône, <i>f.</i> , discussion.	êh, eh.
disgrâzia, misfortune.	elâggere, to elect.
dispiacâre, to displease; mi dispiace, I'm sorry, I don't like.	emblâma, <i>m.</i> , emblem.
dissse, <i>3rd sing. past abs. of dîre.</i>	energiâ, energy.
distendere, to distend; ref., to reach out.	entrâre, to enter, go in, get in, come in.
disteso, <i>pp. of distendere.</i>	esagerâre, to exaggerate.
distinguere, to distinguish.	esâme, <i>m.</i> , examination.
dîte, <i>2d pl. imv. of dîre.</i>	esclamâre, to exclaim.
dito, finger.	esercito, army.
	esistere, to exist.
	espressiône, <i>f.</i> , expression, remark.
	esprimere, to express.
	essere, to be, become; ref., to be.

èst, <i>m.</i> , east.	fine, <i>f.</i> , end.
èstasi, <i>f.</i> , ecstasy.	finèstra, window.
età, age.	fingere, to feign; finto, fictitious.
Euròpa, Europe.	finire, to finish, end; — coll' andrà, finally to go.
F	
facchino, porter.	fino a, until.
faccia, face; di —, in —, opposite.	fiòre, <i>m.</i> , flower.
facile, easy.	florino, florin, <i>an obsolete coin worth about \$2.50.</i>
fálco, falcon.	Firènze, <i>f.</i> , Florence.
falsità, falseness.	fiume, <i>m.</i> , river.
falso, false.	foglia, leaf.
fáme, <i>f.</i> , hunger.	fóito, thick.
fanciúlla, girl.	fondare, to found.
fanciúllo, boy, child.	fondo, depth, trough, hollow, basis.
fantásma, <i>m.</i> , phantom.	fontána, fountain.
fáre, to do, make, have, let, take, say, be, act, serve as; refl., to become, get; lascia — a me, leave it to me; dólce — niénte, sweet idleness; sul — di, toward; fa, ago. <i>Other idioms in which fáre appears are registered only under the other words concerned.</i>	forestière, <i>m.</i> , foreigner, stranger.
fatále, fatal.	formare, to form.
fatica, fatigue, difficulty.	fornire, to furnish; — di, to give.
fatto, fact.	fóro, forum, market place.
favóre, <i>m.</i> , favor.	fórse, perhaps.
febráio, February.	fórte, strong.
fébbre, <i>f.</i> , fever.	fortezza, fort.
féccero, <i>3rd pl. past abs. of fáre.</i>	fortunáto, fortunate.
felice, happy.	fórza, force, strength; con —, hard.
ferfre, to wound.	fotografia, photograph.
férmox, firm, certain.	fra, between, among, amid, through.
férro, iron.	francése, French.
figlio, son.	frásca, bush.
filáre, to spin.	fráse, <i>f.</i> , sentence.
filosofia, philosophy.	fratéollo, brother.
finalménite, finally, at last.	fréddo, cold; fáre —, to be cold.
finchè, as long as, until; — . . . non, until.	fréttta, haste.
	frútto, fruit.
	fuggire, to flee.
	fuggitivo, fugitive.
	fulgóre, <i>m.</i> , glow.
	fumáre, to smoke.
	fuôco, fire.
	fuorchè, except.

G

- galleria, gallery.
 garantire, to guarantee.
 gente, *f.*, people, nation.
 gentile, gentle, polite, kind.
 già, already.
 giacere, to lie.
 giallo, yellow.
 Gianicolo, Janiculum.
 giardino, garden.
 gigantesco, gigantic.
 ginocchio, knee.
 giocare, to play.
 gioia, joy.
 giornale, *m.*, journal, newspaper.
 giorno, day; per —, daily.
 giovane, young; *n. m.*, young man.
 Giovanni, *m.*, John.
 giovine, young.
 giovinetta, youth.
 girare, to whirl.
 gire, *poetical*, to go; girsene, to go away.
 gita, trip, excursion.
 giudicare, to judge.
 giudice, *m.*, judge, justice.
 giungere, to join, clasp; — a, to reach.
 giurare, to swear.
 giusto, just, fair.
 godere, to enjoy.
 governare, to govern.
 grande, great, large, big; *n. m.*, great man; ffre un — fréddo, to be very cold.
 grandioso, grand.
 gravare, to weigh down, oppress.
 gravemente, gravely, seriously.
 grazia, favor; *pl.*, thanks.
 grido, cry.
 guadagnare, to earn, gain, win.

guanto, glove.

guardare, to look, look at, watch.
 guglia, pinnacle.

I

- idéa, idea.
 ideale, *m.*, ideal.
 ieri, yesterday.
 illudere, to deceive.
 illustrissimo, excellency.
 immenso, immense.
 imparare, to learn.
 impaziente, impatient.
 impedire, to hinder.
 impégnو, pledge, earnestness.
 imperatore, *m.*, emperor.
 império, empire.
 importante, important.
 impossibile, impossible.
 in, in, at, to; da allora in poi, thereafter.
 incanto, enchantment.
 inchino, bow.
 incontrare, to meet.
 indorare, to gild.
 indurre, to induce, lead.
 inerzia, inertia.
 infatti, in fact.
 ingegnere, *m.*, engineer.
 Inghilterra, England.
 inginocchiarsi, kneeling.
 innalzare, to raise.
 insegnare, to teach.
 insieme, together.
 interessante, interesting.
 interesse, *m.*, interest.
 intonare, to intone, start singing.
 intorno, round about.
 introduzione, *f.*, introduction.
 inutile, useless.

invasore, *m.*, invader; *adj.*, invading.

invéce, instead.

invérno, winter.

invisibile, invisible.

fra, anger.

irraggiáto, radiant.

irrequiêto, anxious.

Itália, Italy.

italiano, Italian.

L

là, there; *al di là di*, beyond.

lágoo, lake.

lágrima, tear.

lasciare, to leave, let, fail; *lascia fáre a me*, leave it to me.

látte, *m.*, milk.

lavorare, to work.

lavóro, labor, work.

légge, *f.*, law.

leggere, to read.

lénito, slow, quiet, gentle.

léttéra, letter.

leváre, to raise, rise.

lezióne, *f.*, lesson.

li, there; *di li a*, within.

libertà, liberty, freedom.

libro, book.

licere, *poetical*, to be permitted.

liéto, glad.

liéve, light.

língua, tongue, language.

lira, lira, *a coin worth about 20 cents.*

litigânte, *m.*, litigant.

lontâno, distant, far; *da —*, in the distance.

lúme, *m.*, light.

lunedì, Monday.

lúngo, *adj.*, long.

lúngo, *prep.*, along.

luôgo, place.

M

ma, but.

máccchina, machine.

mádre, *f.*, mother.

maggióre, greater.

mágico, magic.

mái, never, ever; *non . . . —*, never.

maláto, sick.

malattía, sickness, trouble.

mále, badly, ill; *n. m.*, harm, ill; *far —*, to hurt.

mandáre, to send.

mangíare, to eat.

maniéra, manner.

manifestáre, to manifest.

máno, *f.*, hand.

máre, *m.*, sea.

Maria, Mary.

Mário, *proper name*.

matíta, pencil.

mattína, morning.

mázzo, cluster.

médico, doctor.

medioevále, mediaeval.

Mediterráneo, Mediterranean.

méggio, better, best.

mélia, apple.

memória, memory.

menáre, to lead, take.

méno, less; *le díce — diéci*, ten minutes of two; *non potére a — di non*, not to be able to help; *i —*, the minority.

ménte, *f.*, mind; *venfre in —*, to occur.

méntre, while.

meravigliare, to surprise.	muovere, to move, start.
mercato, market.	muro, wall.
mescolare, to mingle.	
mese, <i>m.</i> , month.	
metà, half.	N
mettere, to put, set; <i>refl.</i> , to begin.	Nápoli, <i>f.</i> , Naples.
mèzzo, half; in — a, amid; fino a —, until the middle of; le due e —, half past two.	narrare, to narrate, tell.
mèzzogiorno, noon; dopo —, P. M.	nascere, to be born or formed.
míca: non . . . —, not.	Natále, <i>m.</i> , Christmas.
Michelángelo, Michelangelo.	nazionale, <i>f.</i> , nation.
migliore, better, best.	ne, thence; andarsene, to go off or away.
Miláno, <i>f.</i> , Milan.	nè, nor, neither; non . . . nè . . . nè, neither . . . nor.
minacciare, to threaten.	néanche, non . . . —, not even.
minaccioso, threatening.	nébbia, mist.
mise, 3rd sing. past abs. of mettere.	necessário, necessary.
misterioso, mysterious.	negare, to deny, refuse.
modérno, modern.	nemico, enemy.
móglie, <i>f.</i> , wife.	nemméno, non . . . —, not even.
moltéplice, manifold.	néro, black.
moltissimo, very much, a great deal of.	nessuno, no one; non . . . —, not anyone.
mólto, much, very much; <i>adv.</i> , much, very; far — male, to hurt badly.	néve, <i>f.</i> , snow.
moménto, moment.	nido, nest.
móndo, world; non sapére in che — si sfa, not to know where one is, to be completely bewildered.	níente, non . . . —, nothing, not anything; dolce far —, sweet idleness.
montare, to mount, go up.	no, no, not.
mónte, <i>m.</i> , mountain, mount.	nôdo, knot, link.
morire, to die.	nôme, <i>m.</i> , name.
mormorio, murmur.	non, not, no; — . . . che, — . . . se —, only; — che, to say nothing of; se —, except; se — che, if . . . not, but; più . . . che —, more than; — potére —, not to be able to avoid or fail; — potére a méndo —, not to be able to help; un — so che di buono, something good, a certain goodness; — so quale, some . . . or other.
môrte, <i>f.</i> , death.	
môssero, 3rd pl. past abs. of muovere.	
mostrare, to show; <i>refl.</i> , to appear.	
múccio, pile.	

nondiméno, nevertheless.
 nónna, grandmother.
 notizia, notice, news.
 nótte, *f.*, night.
 núbe, *f.*, cloud.
 nílla, non . . . —, nothing.
 número, number.
 nuócere, to hurt.
 nuóvo, new; che c' è di —?,
 what's the news?

O

o, *conj.*, or, either.
 o, *interj.*, O; o che, used without
 translatable force to introduce a
 question.
 obbligáre, to oblige.
 obelisco, obelisk.
 occasióne, *f.*, occasion.
 occhiáli, *m. pl.*, glasses.
 occhiáta, glance.
 ócchio, eye.
 occidentále, western.
 occupáre, to occupy.
 ódio, hatred.
 offrire, to offer.
 oggi, today.
 ógni, every.
 oh, oh.
 ómbra, shadow.
 ombrélo, umbrella.
 onoráre, to honor.
 onóre, *m.*, honor.
 ópera, work.
 operáio, workman.
 opinióne, *f.*, opinion.
 óra, *adv.*, now; or —, just.
 óra, *n.*, hour, time.
 órfano, orphan.
 óro, gold.
 osannáre, to sing hosanna.

óssو, bone.
 ozióso, idle.

P

páce, *f.*, peace.
 pádre, *m.*, father.
 padróne, *m.*, master.
 pagáre, to pay.
 páginas, page.
 palázzo, palace.
 pállido, pale.
 páne, *m.*, bread.
 paniére, *m.*, basket.
 parére, to seem, appear.
 parláre, to speak.
 paróla, word.
 párté, *f.*, part.
 partíre, to depart, leave; — di, to
 leave.
 partita, match, game.
 passáre, to pass.
 pásso, step.
 patérno, of one's parents.
 pátria, fatherland.
 páura, fear.
 páusa, pause.
 paziénta, patience.
 peccáto, sin; *interj.*, too bad.
 péna, trouble.
 pémina, pen.
 pensáre, to think.
 pensiéro, thought.
 pentírsi, to repent.
 per, for, through, along, in, on, as,
 as for; — quanto sia buñno,
 good as it is; stáre —, to be
 about to.
 péra, pear.
 perchè, why, because, in order
 that; *n. m.*, reason.
 pérdere, to lose.

perfettamente , perfectly, exactly.	ponente , <i>m.</i> , west.
pericolo , danger.	ponte , <i>m.</i> , bridge.
permettere , to permit, allow.	popolo , people.
però , however, though.	porre , to put, place, send.
perorare , to plead.	porta , door.
persuadere , to persuade, convince.	portare , to carry, bring, take, show.
pésce , <i>m.</i> , fish.	possa , <i>3rd sing. pres. subj. of potére</i> .
pizzo , piece.	possibile , possible.
piacere , to please; <i>n. m.</i> , pleasure, favor; <i>avr</i> —, to be glad; <i>mi piace</i> , I like.	posto , place.
piangere , to weep, cry, weep for.	potente , powerful.
piano , smooth, slow; <i>adv.</i> , softly, quietly.	potére , to be able; <i>posso</i> , I can, I may; <i>non</i> — <i>non</i> , not to be able to avoid or fail; <i>non</i> — <i>a méno di non</i> , not to be able to help.
picchiare , to knock.	poveretta , poor woman.
piccolo , little, small.	poveretto , poor fellow.
piède , <i>m.</i> , foot; <i>a piedi</i> , on foot.	pôvero , poor; <i>n.</i> , poor man.
pienamente , fully.	pranzo , dinner.
pieno , full.	praticare , to practice, associate.
pietà , pity.	preferire , to prefer.
Piêtro , Peter.	preghiera , prayer, entreaty.
pigliare , to take, catch.	prêmere , to press.
Pincio , Pincian Hill.	prendere , <i>prendersi</i> , to take.
pistola , pistol.	presentare , to present.
pittore , <i>m.</i> , painter.	présente , present.
pittura , painting.	presépe , <i>m.</i> , stable.
più , more, most, longer, again; — ... e —, the more . . . the more;	presso , <i>da</i> —, near.
non . . . —, not, no, not any;	prestare , to lend.
i —, the majority.	prêsto , quickly, soon, early.
piuttosto , rather.	pretendere , to expect.
plâga , sky.	prevedere , to foresee.
po' , abbreviated form of poco .	prezioso , valuable.
pochissimo , very little.	prêzzo , price.
poco , little, a little.	prima , first, before; — <i>di</i> , — <i>che</i> , before.
poesía , poetry, poem.	principio , beginning.
poëta , <i>m.</i> , poet.	profondo , deep, low.
pôi , then; <i>da allôra in</i> —, there- after; — <i>che</i> , when.	proibire , to forbid.
poichè , after.	
pôiso , pulse.	

prometttere, to promise.	ragazzo, boy.
pronto, ready, quick.	ragione, f., reason; avér —, to be right.
propagare, to spread abroad.	râse, 3rd sing. past abs. of râdere.
proseguire, to continue.	re, m., king.
protégere, to protect, patronize.	regalare, to give.
provvidenza, providence.	regina, queen.
pubblicare, to publish.	regnare, to reign.
punto, point; adv., at all.	rêndere, to render, give back, make.
può, 3rd sing. pres. ind. of potere.	rêsero, 3rd pl. past abs. of rôndere.
purchè, provided that, if only.	restare, to stay.
pure, yet, just; — troppo, unfortunately.	restituire, to give back.

Q

quadro, picture.	ribellarsi, to rebel.
qualche, some, a few; ha — cosa di buono, there is something good about it.	ribelle, m., rebel.
qualcheduno, someone.	ricchezza, riches, wealth.
qualcosa, something.	ricco, rich.
quale, which, what, as; il —, who, which; non so —, some . . . or other.	ricedere, to receive, get.
qualità, quality.	richiedere, to ask.
quando, when.	riconoscere, to recognize.
quanto, how much, as much, as much as, all that, that, as; per — sia buono, good as it is.	ricuperare, to recover, regain.
quarto, quarter.	ricusare, to refuse, deny.
quasi, almost, as if.	rider, to laugh.
quello, that, that one, the one, the, he; — che, what, that.	rifiutare, to refuse.
questo, this, this one.	rifugiarsi, to take refuge.
qui, here; di —, hence.	riguardare, to look again, regard, concern.

R

raccolta, collection.	rilevare, to raise again; refl., to rise again.
raccontare, to narrate, tell, tell about.	rimanere, to remain, be left, be.
râdere, to shave, sweep.	rimettere, to replace; refl., to gain.
ragazza, girl.	rincrescere, to displease; mi rincréisce, I'm sorry.

rispéttō, respect.	sciögliere, to untie, remove.
rispóndere, to answer, reply.	sciòpero, strike; fare —, to strike.
rispóse, <i>3rd sing. past abs. of rispóndere.</i>	scodélla, bowl.
ritárdo, delay; in —, late.	scópa, broom.
ritiráre, to draw back.	scopáre, to sweep.
riuscíre, to go out again, succeed.	scordársi di, to forget.
rivedére, to see again.	scórso, last.
rizzáre, to raise; <i>refl.</i> , to rise.	scrivanía, desk.
Rómā, Rome.	scrivere, to write.
románō, Roman.	scuóla, school.
románzo, novel.	scúro, dark.
rómpere, to break.	se, if, whether; se non, except;
rôsa, rose.	se non che, if . . . not, but;
rôseo, rosy.	non . . . se non, only.
rôsso, red.	sécolo, century.
rotóndo, round.	secóndo, according to.
	sedére, to sit; sedítō, sitting.
	sêggiola, chair.
	segnáre, to mark.
	seguênte, following.
	seguitáre, to follow; — a, to keep on.
	sémplice, simple.
	sêmpre, always.
	sêmno, wisdom.
	sensazíone, <i>f.</i> , sensation.
	sênsø, sense.
	sentíre, to feel, hear, listen, listen to; sentíte, I say, tell me.
	sênça, — che, without.
	séra, evening.
	sêrva, servant.
	servíre, to serve.
	servitôre, <i>m.</i> , servant.
	séte, <i>f.</i> , thirst; avér —, to be thirsty.
	settimâna, week.
	sevêro, severe.
	sfôrzo, effort.
	sguárdo, glance.

S

sácro, sacred.	
salfre, to go up.	
salôtto, parlor.	
salutáre, — a, to greet.	
salúte, <i>f.</i> , health.	
sângue, <i>m.</i> , blood.	
sâno, sane, safe.	
sânto, holy; saint.	
sapére, to know, find out, know how, be able; far —, to tell; non — in che módô si sâ, not to know where one is, to be completely bewildered; un non so che di buôno, something good, a certain goodness; non so quâle, some . . . or other.	
scâla, stair.	
scárpa, shoe.	
scêna, scene.	
scéndere, to go down.	
sciôcco, fool; da —, foolishly.	

sì, yes, so; ah sì?, is that so?	sì	spina, thorn.
che è buono, it's very good indeed.		spirito, spirit.
siépe, <i>f.</i> , hedge.	spósa, wife.	
signóra, lady.	spôso, bridegroom; <i>adj.</i> , engaged.	
signóre, <i>m.</i> , lord, gentleman, master, Mr.	stamáne, this morning.	
silenzioso, silent, still.	stánno, <i>3rd pl. pres. ind.</i> of stáre.	
símile, similar, like, such.	stanotte, last night.	
simpático, sympathetic, agreeable.	stánza, room.	
sincéro, sincere.	stáre, to stand, be, stay, sit; — per, to be about to.	
Sistína, Sistine.	staséra, this evening.	
so, <i>1st sing. pres. ind.</i> of sapére.	státo, state.	
società, society.	stazióne, <i>f.</i> , station.	
soffrire, to suffer.	stermináto, boundless.	
soggiogáre, to subjugate.	stéssso, same, self.	
sóglia, threshold.	stóffa, stuff, goods.	
sóglia, throne.	stória, history, story.	
sógno, dream.	stòrico, historic, historical.	
soldáto, soldier.	stráda, street, road.	
sólido, penny, cent.	stráno, strange.	
sóle, <i>m.</i> , sun, sunlight.	strappáre, to snatch, tear.	
solére, to be wont.	stréttó, narrow.	
sólo, alone, single, only.	strídulo, harsh, rustling.	
soltánto, only.	stringere, to bind, press.	
sorélia, sister.	studénte, <i>m.</i> , student.	
sormontáre, to surmount.	studiáre, to study.	
Sorrénto, Sorrento.	stúdio, study.	
sorrídere, to smile.	stupefátto, astonished.	
sospettáre, to suspect.	stupêndo, fine.	
sótto, beneath.	su, up, on, upon.	
spagnuólo, Spanish; <i>n.</i> , Spaniard.	súbito, at once; — che, as soon as.	
spaventáre, to frighten.	succédere, to succeed, follow, happen; succédersi, <i>n. m.</i> , succession.	
spázio, space.	successávo, succeeding.	
spedále, <i>m.</i> , hospital.	suôno, sound.	
spedire, to send.	superiôre, superior.	
speránza, hope.		
speráre, to hope.		
spésso, often.		
spéttro, spectre, ghost.	T	
spiegáre, to explain.	tacére, to be silent or still.	
	taciturno, taciturn, silent.	

tâle, such, so.	triônto, triumph.
tânto, so much, as, so; — più, all the more.	triste, sad.
târdi, late.	trôppo, too, too much, very; pur —, unfortunately.
târdo, slow.	trovâre, to find.
tâsca, pocket.	tumûltô, tumult.
tâvola, table.	tûtto, all, everything; — il, the whole; tûtti e dûie, both.
teâtro, theatre.	
tedesco, German.	U
telefonâre, to telephone.	ubbidîre, to obey.
têma, <i>m.</i> , theme.	uccêllo, bird.
temêre, to fear, be afraid.	udîre, to hear.
têmpo, time, weather; tânto —, so long.	síltimo, last, latest.
tenêre, to hold; — per férmo, to be certain; — vivo, to keep up.	umâno, human, of man, kindly.
têrra, earth, ground, land, world.	símido, wet.
terribile, terrible.	unfre, to unite.
terrôre, <i>m.</i> , terror.	unitâ, unity, union.
tesôro, treasure.	universitâ, university.
têsta, head.	tîno, one, some, someone; l' — e l' âltro, both.
Têvere, <i>m.</i> , Tiber.	uômo, man.
tingere, to tinge, stain.	âscio, doorway, door.
toccâre, to touch, feel.	uscire, to go out; — di, to leave.
tôgliere, to take; — a, to take from.	sítile, useful, good.
tôno, tone.	
tornâre, to return, go back, come back; tornârsene, to come home.	V
tôrre, <i>f.</i> , tower.	vacânza, vacation.
tôrto, wrong; avér —, to be wrong.	vâcca, cow.
totâle, total.	vagône, <i>m.</i> , car.
tra, between, through.	valére, to be worth; far —, to prove.
tranquillaménte, calmly.	valisgia, valise, bag.
trárre, to draw, bring, take.	vallâta, valley.
trascinâre, to drag.	van, <i>3rd pl. pres. ind. of andâre.</i>
trattâre, to treat.	vaticâno, Vatican.
tremâre, to tremble.	vêcchia, old woman.
trêno, train.	vêcchio, old; <i>n.</i> , old man.
trionfâle, triumphal.	vedêre, to see; far —, to show.
	vêndere, to sell.
	venerdì, Friday.

Venêzia , Venice.	<i>virtù</i> , f., virtue.
venire , to come, be; — <i>in mente</i> , to occur.	<i>visino</i> , little face.
ventina : <i>tina</i> — <i>di</i> , twenty or so.	<i>visita</i> , visit.
vênto , wind.	<i>visitare</i> , to visit.
vérde , green.	<i>viso</i> , face.
vermiglio , vermillion, red.	<i>vista</i> , sight, view.
vêro , true; <i>non è</i> — ?, <i>a request for assent</i> , to be translated, according to the context, as am I not?, was he not? etc.	<i>vita</i> , life.
vêrso , toward.	<i>vivere</i> , to live.
vessillo , banner.	<i>vivo</i> , alive, keen; <i>tenér</i> —, to keep up.
vestito , dress.	<i>vizio</i> , vice.
vi , there, to it, in it.	<i>vóce</i> , f., voice.
via , way, street; <i>adv.</i> , away.	<i>volére</i> , to will, be willing, wish, want, like, intend, decide, grant, think; — <i>dire</i> , to mean; <i>ci vuole</i> , it takes; <i>côsa vuole?</i> , never mind.
viâggio , journey.	<i>vôlta</i> , time; <i>tina</i> —, once, once upon a time; <i>un' altra</i> —, again.
viavâi , <i>m.</i> , coming and going, surging.	<i>vólume</i> , <i>m.</i> , volume.
vién , <i>3rd sing. pres. ind. of venire</i> .	<i>vôto</i> , vote.
villa , villa.	
villâggio , village.	
vincere , to win, vanquish, conquer, overcome; <i>dársi per vinto</i> , to give in.	Z
víno , wine.	<i>zio</i> , uncle.
vinto , <i>pp. of vincere</i> .	<i>zitto</i> , silent.

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

This vocabulary contains all English words appearing in exercise sections involving translation into Italian, except articles, cardinal and ordinal numerals, and possessive and personal pronouns.

Italian nouns ending in o are masculine and those ending in a are feminine, unless indication to the contrary is given.

Irregular Italian verbs are marked with a star.

A

- able: be —, potére.*
about, (*- approximately*) circa;
(*- around*) intórno a; — it, ne;
be — to, stáre * per.
according to, secóndo.
ache, dolére.*
affection, affétto.
afraid: be —, temére.
after, dópo; day — tomorrow,
domán l' altro.
again, ancóra.
against, cóntro; (*before a disjunctive pronoun*) cóntro di.
agent, fattóre, *m.*
agreeable, simpático.
all, tutto; not . . . at —, non . . .
púnto.
allude, allúdere.*
almost, quásí.
alone, sólo.
already, già.
although, benchè.
always, sémpre.
among, fra.
amuse, divertire.
ancient, antico.
and, e; go —, andáre * a.
- another, un altro.
answer, rispóndere.*
any, *adj.*, alcúno; not . . . —,
non . . . nessúno; *pron.*, ne.
anything, qualche cosa; not . . .
—, non . . . niénte.
applaud, applaudire.
apple, mela.
April, aprile, *m.*
arrival, arrívo.
arrive, arrivare.
as, cóme, tanto, quanto: *see 32*;
as soon as, súbito che; as far
as, fino a.
ascend, salire.*
ashamed: be —, vergognársi.
ask, (*lesson 15*) domandáre; (*lesson 32 and later lessons*) chiédere *; — for, chiédere.*
at, a; at last, finalménte; at least,
alméno; at once, súbito; at
his house, da lúi; not . . . at
all, non . . . púnto; look at,
guardáre.
aunt, zia.
automobile, automóbil, *m.*
autumn, autúnno.
away, via; go —, andársene.*

B

back, dietro; come or go —, tornare; give —, restituire.
 bad, cattivo.
 bag, valigia.
 basket, panière, *m.*
 be, essere *; (*of health*) stáre *;
 I am to, dévo.* Other idioms
 with be are registered only under
 the other words concerned.
 beat, bátttere.
 beautiful, bello.
 because, perchè.
 before, *adv.*, prima; *conj.*, prima
 che; *prep.*, (*of time*) prima di;
 (*of place*) davanti.
 beg, pregáre.
 begin, cominciáre.
 behind, dietro; (*before a disjunc-*
 tive pronoun) dietro a.
 believe, crédere.
 beside, accánto a.
 best, *adj.*, migliore; *adv.*, meglio.
 betray, tradire.
 better, *adj.*, migliore; *adv.*, meglio.
 between, tra.
 big, gránde.
 bind, stringere.*
 black, néro.
 book, libro.
 born: be —, nascere.*
 both, tutti e díue.
 bow, inchino.
 boy, ragázzo.
 brave, coraggióso.
 bread, páne, *m.*
 break, rómpere.*
 brick, mattóne, *m.*
 bring, portáre.
 broad, lárgo.
 brother, fratello.

build, costruire.*

business, affáre, *m.*

but, ma; (= only) non . . . che.

button, bottóne, *m.*

buy, compráre.

by, da; (*in special cases*) di, per.**C**

call, chiamáre.
 can: I —, pôssso.*
 care, cûra; take —, badáre.
 carry, portáre.
 cent, sólдо.
 centre, cêntro.
 century, sécolo; see 39 (c).
 certain, céerto.
 cheek, guância.
 child, fanciúlo.
 choose, scégliere.*
 church, chiësa.
 city, cittâ.
 close, chiúdere.*
 cloud, núvola.
 coat, ábito.
 coffee, caffè, *m.*
 cold, fréddo.
 color, colóre, *m.*
 come, venire*; — back, tornare;
 — in, entráre.
 comfort, confortáre.
 company, compagnia.
 compel, costringere.*
 conduct, condúrre.*
 conquer, víncere.*
 consist, constáre.*
 content, contênto.
 continue, continuáre.
 convince, convíncere.*
 cook, cuôcere.*
 corner, cánto.

cost, costáre.

count, cónte, *m.*

country, paése, *m.*

courage, corággio.

cousin, cugíno.

cover, coprire.*

crowd, affolláre.

crude, crúdo.

cry, piángere.*

custom, costúme, *m.*

cut, tagliáre.

D

dark, scúro; (*lessons 25 and 33*)

búio.

day, giórno; — after tomorrow,
domán l' altro.

decide, decidere.*

depart, partíre.

desire, *n.*, desidério.

desire, *vb.*, desideráre.

desk, scrivanía.

die, moríre.*

difficult, difficile.

difficulty, difficoltà.

dinner, pránzo.

disappear, sparíre.*

ditch, fóssa.

divide, dividere.*

do, fáre.* *For do as auxiliary,*
see 54 (g).

doge, dóge, *m.*

door, pôrta.

doubt, dúbbio.

down, giù; **sit** —, sedére.*

drag, trárre.*

draw, trárre.*

dress, vestíto.

drink, bérre.*

duke, dúca, *m.*

E

each, *adj.*, ógni; *pron.*, ognúno;

— other: *see 47, 2 and 51 (f).*

early, prêsto.

earn, guadagnáre.

easy, fácil.

eat, mangiare.

egg, uôvo.

either, o.

Emmanuel, Emanuèle, *m.*

employee, impiegáto.

end, finíre.

enemy, nemíco.

English, inglése.

enjoy, godére.

enough, abbastánza; **be** —, ba-
stáre.

enter, entráre.

entreaty, preghiéra.

escape, scappáre.

Europe, Európa.

even, ancóra; **not** . . . —, non
. . . nemménó.

evening, séra; **this** —, staséra.

ever, sêmpre.

every, ógni.

everything, tutto.

examination, esáme, *m.*

exclamation, esclamazíone, *f.*

exist, esistere.*

explain, spiegáre.

express, esprímere.*

extinguish, spégnere.*

eye, ócchio.

F

face, fáccia.

fall, cadére.*

far, lontáno; **as** — **as**, fino a.

father, pádre, *m.*

fatherland, pátria.

fault, cólpa.

favor, favóre, *m.*

fear, temére.

feel, sentiré.

few, a —, pôchi.

fight, combáttere.

finally, finalménite.

find, trovare.

fine, bêlo.

finger, dito.

finish, finire.

first, *adv.*, prima.

flee, fuggire.

Florence, Firénze, *f.*

flower, fiôre, *m.*

follow, seguiré.*

foot, piéde, *m.*

for, per; — two years, dûe ánni,

da dûe ánni: see 79 (*e*); ask —,

chiédere *; look —, cercare;

wait —, aspettare.

foreigner, forestière, *m.*

France, Fráncia.

French, francése.

friend, amíco.

from, da; (*in special cases*) di.

fry, friggere.*

full, piêno.

G

gallery, galleria.

garden, giardino.

gather, cõgliere.*

gentleman, signóre, *m.*

get, ricévere.

girl, ragázza.

give, dáre *; — back, restituire.

glasses, occhiáli, *m. pl.*

glove, guánto.

go, andáre *; go away, andár-

sene *; go back, tornáre; go in, entráre; go out, uscire *; go up, salire.*

good, buôno.

goods, stôfia.

government, govérno.

gratitude, gratitúdine, *f.*

great, grânde.

greet, salutáre.

grieve, dolére.*

ground, terra.

grow, créscre.*

guarantee, garantíre.

guard, guárdia.

H

habit, abitúdine, *f.*

half, *n.*, metà; *adj.*, mèzzo; — past two, le dûe e mèzzo.

hand, máno, *f.*; right —, dêstra.

handkerchief, fazoléttò.

handsome, bêlo.

happen, succédere.*

happy, felice.

hard, *adv.*, fôrte.

harm, nuôcere.*

hat, cappélio.

have, avére *; (*causative*) fâre *; (*expressing obligation*) dovére.*

For have as auxiliary, see 54, 3.

head, tésta.

health, salúte, *f.*

hear, sentiré; (*lesson 38*) udíre.*

help, aiutáre; not to be able to —, non potére* a méno di non.

here, qui, ci: see 84; — is, écco.

hide, nascondere.*

high, alto.

hill, cõlle, *m.*

hold, tenére.*

home, cásá.

honor, ondore, *m.*

hope, sperare.

hotel, albergo.

hour, ora.

• **house**, casa; at his —, da lui.

how, come; — much, quanto.

I

idea, idea.

if, se.

impossible, impossibile.

in, in; (*with the name of a city*)

a; (= *within*) fra; (*in special cases*) di; come or go in, entrare;

in order that, perchè; in this way, così.

industrious, industrioso.

instead, invece.

interesting, interessante.

into, in; (*in special cases*) a.

invade, invadere.*

Italian, italiano.

Italy, Italia.

J

John, Giovanni, *m.*

June, giugno.

K

keep, tenere *; — still, tacere.*

key, chiave, *f.*

kill, uccidere.*

king, re, *m.*

knock, picchiare.

know, sapere *; (= *be acquainted with*) conoscere.*

L

lady, signora.

lake, lago.

large, grande.

last, ultimo; at —, finalmente;

— night, stanotte; — year,

l' anno scorso.

late, in ritardo.

latest, ultimo.

laugh, ridere.*

lawyer, avvocato.

lead, menare.

leaf, foglia.

least: at —, almeno.

leave, (*intransitive*) partire; (*transitive*) lasciare.

lend, prestare.

lesson, lezione, *f.*

let, lasciare. *For let as auxiliary, see the note on p. 115.*

letter, lettera.

library, biblioteca.

lie, giacere.*

life, vita.

light, *n.*, lume, *m.*

light, *vb.*, accendere.*

like, *prep.*, come; — a man, da uomo.

like, *vb.*, (*with an infinitive*) volere *; I like it, mi piace.*

line, linea.

little, piccolo; a — (= *some*), un po' di; (= *somewhat*), un po'.

live, vivere.*

long, lungo.

look, — at, guardare; — for, cercare.

lose, perdere.

love, amare.

low, profondo.

lunch, colazione, *f.*

M

make, fare.*

man, uomo; young —, giovane, *m.*

manner, maniera.

market, mercato.

Mary, Maria.

may: I —, posso.*

Milan, Milàno, f.

mile, miglio.

minute, minuto; ten minutes past

two, le due e dieci; ten minutes
of two, le due meno dieci.

mistaken: be —, sbagliarsi.

moment, momento.

monarch, monárca, m.

Monday, lunedì.

money, denaro.

month, mese, m.

more, più.

morning, mattina; this —, sta-
máne.

most, più.

mother, madre, f.

mountain, montagna.

move, muovere.*

Mr., signor.

much, molto; how —, quanto;
so —, tanto; too —, troppo;

very —, molto.

must: I —, devo.*

not, non.

novel, romanzo.

now, ora.

O

obliged: be —, dovré.*

o'clock: two —, le due.

of, di; of it, of him, of them, ne;
ten minutes of two, le due meno
dieci.

off, via; take —, levare.

offer, offrire.*

often, spesso.

old, vecchio.

on, su; (*in special cases*) con.

once, una volta; at —, subito.

one, uno; (*as indefinite subject*)
si; no —, nessuno; other —,
altro; that —, the —, quello;
this —, questo; — who, chi.

only, adj., sólo; adv., soltanto.

open, adj., aperto.

open, vb., aprire.*

or, o; ten or so: see 40.

order, n., órdine, m.; in — that,
perchè.

order, vb., comandare.

other, — one, altro; each — : see
47, 2 and 51 (f).

ought: I —, dovréi.

out, fuori; go —, uscire *; put —,
spagnere.*

outside, di fuori.

owe, dovré.*

own, proprio.

N

name, nome, m.

Naples, Nápoli, f.

near, vicino a.

necessary, necessário; be —, bi-
sognare.

never, mai.

new, nuôvo.

newspaper, giornale, m.

night, nötte, f.; last —, stanotte.

no, no; — one, nessuno.

noon, mezzogiorno.

P

pain, dolére.*

pair, páio.

paper, carta.
pardon, perdonare.
parlor, salotto.
past, passato; half — two, le due
e mezzo.

patience, pazienza.
pay, pagare.
peasant, contadino.
pen, penna.
pencil, matita.

perfectly, perfettamente.
perhaps, forse.
person, persona.
persuade, persuadere.*
photograph, fotografia.
picture, quadro.
place, n., posto.
place, vb., porre.*
please, piacere.*

pleasure, piacere, m.
pocket, tasca.
poem, poesia.
polite, gentile.
poor, povero.
pope, papà, m.
porter, facchino.
praise, lodare.
prefer, preferire.
present, presentare.
press, premere.

pretty, bello.
prisoner, prigioniero.
probably, probabilmente.
promise, promettere.*
protect, proteggere.*
provided, purchè.
public, pubblico.
push, spingere.*
put, (lessons 28 and 30) mettere *;
(lessons 32 and 34) porre *; —
out, spiegere.*

queen, regina.
quick, subito.

Q

rain, piövere.*
read, leggere.*
ready, pronto.
really, veramente.
recall, ricordare.
receive, ricevere.
recognize, conoscerne.*
red, rosso.

remain, rimanere.*
Renaissance, Rinascimento.
repeat, ripetere.
respect, rispettare.
return, tornare.
right, diritto; — hand, destra; be
—, avér* ragione.
rise, sorgere.*
river, fiume, m.
Rome, Roma.
room, stanza.
rose, rosa.
round, rotondo.
run, correre.*
Russia, Rússia.

S

sacristan, sagrestano.
say, dire.*
scene, scena.
school, scuola.
search, cercare.
seated, seduto.;
see, vedere.*
seek, cercare.
seem, parere.*

self, stesso.	spend, (<i>of money</i>) spéndere *;
send, mandare.	(<i>of time</i>) passare.
sentence, frase, <i>f.</i>	square, piázza.
September, settémbre, <i>m.</i>	stand, stáre.*
servant, servitóre, <i>m.</i>	start, partire.
serve, servire.	station, stazioni, <i>f.</i>
several, parécchi.	stay, (<i>lesson 15</i>) restare; (<i>lesson 24</i> and later lessons) rimanére.*
sew, cucire.*	still, <i>adj.</i> , quiéto; keep —, tacére.*
shake, scuotere.*	still, <i>adv.</i> , ancóra.
shoe, scárpa.	stocking, cálza.
shop, bottéga.	street, vía.
short, córto.	student, studénte, <i>m.</i>
shoulder, spálla.	study, <i>n.</i> , stúdio.
show, mostrare.	study, <i>vb.</i> , studiare.
shut, chiúdere.*	such a, un tåle.
sick, maláto.	suffer, soffrire.*
sight, vista.	summer, estáte, <i>f.</i>
silent, silenzióso; be —, tacére.*	sun, sóle, <i>m.</i>
since, (<i>causal</i>) poichè; (<i>temporal</i>) daccchè.	Sunday, doménica.
sincere, sincéro.	sure, sicúro.
sing, cantare.	surprise, <i>n.</i> , sorprésa.
sir, signóre, <i>m.</i>	surprise, <i>vb.</i> , sorpréndere *; be surprised, meravigliársi.
sister, sorélla.	surrender, réndersi.*
sit, — down, sedére.*	surround, cíngere.*
site, sito.	swear, giuráre.
sleep, dormire.	sword, spáda.
small, píccolo.	syllable, sillaba.
smile, sorrídere.*	
smoke, fumo.	
snow, <i>n.</i> , néve, <i>f.</i>	T
snow, <i>vb.</i> , nevicáre.	table, távola.
so, così; so much, tánto; I think so, lo crédo; ten or so: see 40.	take, préndere*; (= take away) tògliere *; (= accompany, lead)
some, alcúno, qualche, ne: see 89.	menáre; — care, badáre; — off, leváre; it takes, ci vuóle.*
someone, qualcúno.	talk, parláre.
something, qualche cosa.	tall, áltó.
song, cánto.	telephone, telefonáre.
sonnet, sonétto.	tell, (<i>lessons 13-17</i>) raccontáre; (<i>lessons 35-40</i>) dire.*
soon, préstó; as — as, súbito che.	
speak, parláre.	

than, che, di: *see 33.*

thank, ringraziare.

that, *conj.*, che; *in order* —, perchè.

that, *pron.*, quéllo, ciò, che: *see 42 and 44;* — **one**, quéllo.

theatre, teátro.

then, pôi.

there, là, vi, ci: *see 84;* — **is**: *see note on p. 109.*

thing, cosa.

think, (= meditate) pensare; (= suppose) crederé.

this, quésto; — **one**, quésto; *in* — **way**, così; — **morning**, stamáne; — **evening**, staséra.

though, però.

thousand, migliaio.

through, per.

ticket, bigliéttó.

time, témpo, vólta: *see note on p. 111.*

to, a; (*before the name of a country*) in; (*in special cases*) da, di, per; according to, secóndo; be about to, stáre * per. *For to before an infinitive, see 79 (b); for to with an unemphatic personal pronoun, see 47-50.*

today, oggi.

tomorrow, dománi; day after —, domán l' altro.

too, — much, tróppo; he —, anche lui.

toward, vérso.

tower, tórre, f.

train, trêno.

travel, viaggiare.

tree, álbero.

true, véro.

trunk, baúle, m.

try, cercáre.

turn, (*intransitive*) vólgersi*; (*transitive*) vólgere.*

U

umbrella, ombréollo.

under, sótto.

understand, capíre.

until, *conj.*, finchè non; *prep.* fino a.

up, su; up to, fino a; go up, salire.*

V

vase, váso.

Venice, Venézia.

very, — much, móltó.

Victor, Vittório.

view, vista.

villa, villa.

village, villággio.

visit, visitáre.

vote, votáre.

W

wait, — for, aspettare.

wake, svegliáre.

walk, cammináre.

wall, móro.

want, volére.*

warm, cálido.

waste, sprecáre.

watch, guardáre.

water, ácqua.

way, vía; in this —, così.

weather, témpo.

week, settimána.

weep, piángere.*

well, bêne.

what, *interj.*, cóme.

what, <i>pron.</i> , quélllo che, che, che cosa: <i>see 42-44.</i>	wont: be —, solére.*
when, quándo.	wood, bósco.
where, dóve.	word, pardá.
wherever, dovúnque.	work, <i>n.</i> , lavóro; (<i>literary work</i>) ópera.
which, che, quálé: <i>see 43 and 44.</i>	work, <i>vb.</i> , lavoráre.
while, méntre.	worse, péggio.
white, biánco.	worth: be —, valére.*
who, chi, che: <i>see 43 and 44;</i> one —, chi; whom, cúi.	worthy, dégno.
whole, intéro; the —, tútto il.	write, scrívere.*
whose, di chi.	writer, scrittóre, <i>m.</i>
why, perchè.	wrong: be —, avér* tórtó.
wife, móglie, <i>f.</i>	
willing: be —, volére.*	
wind, vénito.	
window, finéstra.	
winter, invérno.	
wish, volére.*	
with, con.	
without, sénza; (<i>before a disjunctive pronoun</i>) sénza di.	
woman, dónna.	
	Y
	year, ánnو.
	yellow, giállo.
	yes, sì.
	yesterday, iéri.
	yet, ancóra; (= nevertheless) ep-púre.
	yield, cédere.
	young, gióvane.

INDEX

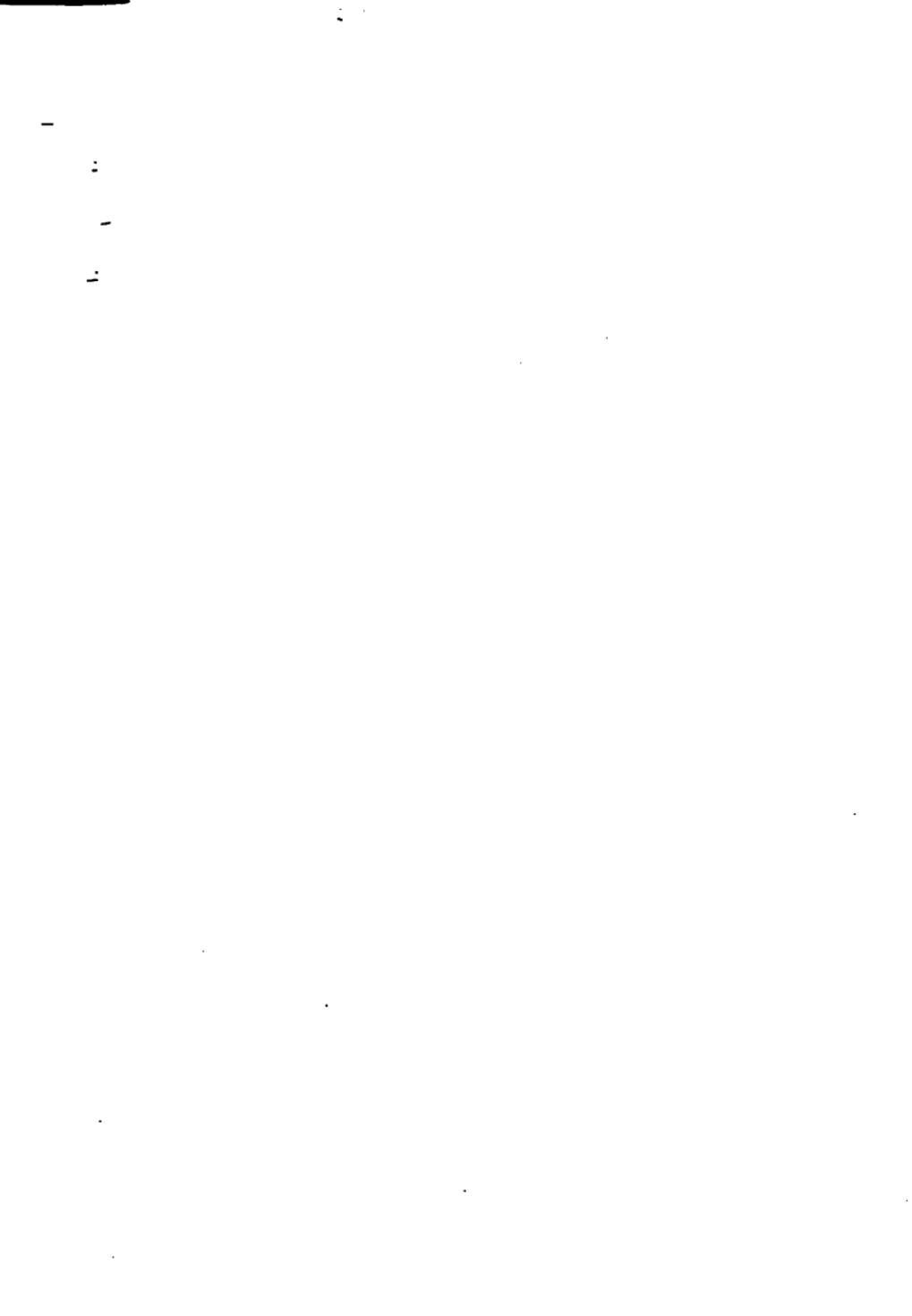
[The numbers refer to paragraphs. *Ad. N.* means the Additional Notes on Pronunciation printed on pp. 6-10.]

- a (letter): 2; Ad. N., 2.
a (preposition): 79; 79, b, h.
Accent: 7; Ad. N. (pp. 9, 10); 47; 48; 84; 92, e.
Accents: 3; 7.
Address (forms of): 52.
Adjectives: 26-34.
Comparison: 31-34; gender: 26; 28; number: 26; 29; position: 27; used as nouns: 20; 30.
Adverbs: 80-85.
ci, vi: 47, a; 84; comparison: 80, 2; manner: 85; ne: 47, 3, a; 56, b; 'never': 83; 'not,' non: 80, 1; 81; 91, a; 'only': 82; position: 80, 1; 'so': 85, a.
'All': 87.
Alphabet: 1; Ad. N., 1.
altrui: 91, d.
'Any': 88.
Articles: 9-16.
Augmentatives: 35-37.
Auxiliary verbs: 53-57.
averè: 53, b; 54, 3; essere: 53, a; 54, 1, 3; compound tenses: 54; 56; modal auxiliaries: 57.
averè: 53, b; 54, 3; 54, b; 92, 5.
'Be': 53, a; 54, 1, 3; 54, a, c, d, f; 92, 126.
bello: 29, c.
'Both': 38, 4; 91.
buono: 29, c.
'Can': see Modal Auxiliaries.
ci (adv.): 47, a; 84.
ci (pron.): 47-50.
Close Vowels: 3; Ad. N., 3.
Comparison: 31-34; 80, 2.
Adjectives: 31-34; adverbs: 80, 2; irregular: 31, a; 80, 2.
Compound Tenses: 54; 56; 73; 75.
Conditional: see Past Future.
Conjugation: 53-68; 92.
First: 59; second: 60; third: 60; fourth: 61; variations: 63; 66, a; 68; irregular verbs: 64-68; 92; auxiliary verbs: 53-57; compound tenses: 54; 56; compound verbs: 67, a; 93, a.
Conjunctions: 78.
With subjunctive: 77, d; 78, a, b.
Consonants: 4-6; Ad. N., 4-6.
Contraction: 12; 23 (¹); 50 (¹); 63, d; 65; 66, 1; 68, a.

- da:** 79, c, f, g.
Dates: 38, b; 39, b, c.
Definite Article: 10-13.
 Form: 10-12; use: 12, a; 13; 38, b; 39, a; 45; 69; 70.
di: 12; 17; 79, b, 3, f, h, j.
Diminutives: 35-37.
'Do': 54, g.
Double Letters: 6.
Doubling: Ad. N., 6; 48, d; 93, a.
e (letter): 3; Ad. N., 3; 68, i, j.
e (conjunction): 78; 78, c.
ecco: 48, e; 84, a.
essere: 53, a; 54, 1, 3; 54, a, c, d; 92, 126.
Exclamations: Ad. N (p. 10); 43, b; 79, b.
'For': 79, e.
Fractions: 39, d.
Future: 54, 2; 68, c; 74; 77.
 Contracted: 65; 66, 1.
Gender: 9-11; 14-15; 18-21; 26; 28.
grande: 29, c.
h: 4; 22, a; 23, a, c; 59, a.
'Have': 53, b; 54, 3; 54, b, h; 57, a; 92, 5.
'Here': 84.
i (letter): 2; 2, a; 4; Ad. N., 2; 22, b; 23, b; 59, a; 60; 92, f.
i (euphonic): 79; 81.
Imperative: 66, b; 72; 77, a.
Imperfect: see Past Descriptive.
Impersonal Verbs: 51; 51, h; 77, c.
Indefinite Article: 14-16.
 Form: 14-15; use: 16; 38, 1; 43, b.
- Infinitive:** 48, b; 58; 69-72.
 Contracted: 65.
Inflections of the Voice: see p. 9.
Interrogation: see Questions.
issimo (suffix): 35, a.
'It': 47; 51; 51, h.
Letters: 1; Ad. N., 1.
'May': see Modal Auxiliaries.
Modal Auxiliaries: 57.
Moods: 57; 69-77; 78, a.
 Conditional: see Past Future.
Imperative: 66, b; 72; 77, a;
 infinitive: 48, b; 58; 65; 69-72; participle: 54, a, b; 62; 63, d; 69-71; subjunctive: 44, c; 77; 78, a.
'Must': see Modal Auxiliaries.
'Myself,' 'thyself,' etc.: 47, 2; 51, e.
ne (adv.): 47, a; 56, b; 84.
ne (pron.): 47, 3; 48; 49; 88; 89.
Neuter Verbs: 54, 3; 56, a.
'Never': 83.
non: 80, 1; 81; 91, a.
'Not': 80, 1; 81.
Nouns: 17-25.
 Gender: 18-21; number: 22-25.
 Number: 9-11; 22-25; 29.
Numerals: 38-40.
 Cardinal: 38; ordinal: 39.
o (letter): 3; Ad. N., 3; 59, b.
o (conjunction): 78; 78, c.
Old Forms: Ad. N., 3, f; 12 (1); 23 (1); 44, a; 47 (1); 48, d; 50 (1); 63, d; 68; 92; 93.

- 'One' (indefinite): 55; 86.
 'Only': 82.
 Open Vowels: 3; Ad. N., 3.
 'Ought': see Modal Auxiliaries.
- Participle: 54, *a, b*; 62; 63, *d*; 69–71.
 Past: 54, *a, b*; 63, *d*; 71, *c*; present: 62; 69–71.
 Partitive: 12, *a*; 88; 89.
 Passive: 54, *i*; 54, *f*; 55; 56, *c*.
 Past Absolute: 60; 65; 66, *z, 3*; 68, *d, e*; 75.
 Past Descriptive:
 Form: 63, 63, *c*; 65; 68, *a, h*; use: 54, *d, e*; 73; 75.
 Past Future: 54, *z*; 68, *b*; 76; 77; 92, *c*.
 Contracted: 65; 66, *i*; 92, *c*.
 Past Perfect: see Perfect Tenses.
 Perfect Tenses: 54, *z*; 56; 73; 75.
 Personal Pronouns: 46–52.
 Conjunctive: 47–50; form: 47; 48, *c, d*; 50; 52, *i*; position: 48; 49.
 Disjunctive: 51–52; omission: 51, *z*; 51, *h*; use: 51; 51, *i*; 51, *a, b, h*.
 Pitch: see p. 9.
 Pluperfect: see Perfect Tenses.
 Plural: 22–25; 29.
 Irregular: 23, *d*; 25; words in -co and -go: 23, *c*.
 Poetic Forms: see Old Forms.
 Possessive: 17; 45; 52, *i*.
 Prefixes: 93, *a*.
 Prepositions: 79.
 da: 79, *c, f, g*.
 'to': 79, *a, b*.
 Present: 65; 66, *4*; 68, *f, g*; 73; 74.
 Preterit: see Past Absolute.
 Preterit Perfect: see Second Past Perfect.
 Pronouns: 41–52; 86–91.
 Demonstrative: 42; indefinite: 86–91; interrogative, 43; personal: see Personal; possessive: see Possessive; reciprocal: see Reciprocal; reflexive: see Reflexive; relative: 44.
 Pronunciation: 1–8; Ad. N.
 qualche: 29, *b*; 89.
 Quantity: 2; Ad. N., 2.
 Questions: Ad. N. (p. 10); 43; 51, *z*; 77, *f, g*; 79, *b*; 81, *a*.
 Reciprocal Pronouns and Verbs: 47, *z*; 48; 49; 50; 51, *z*; 51, *f*; 52, *i*; 56, *b*.
 Reflexive Pronouns: 47, *z*; 48; 49; 50; 51, *z*; 52, *i*; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.
 Reflexive Verbs: 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.
 santo: 29, *c*.
 Second Past Perfect: 54, *z*; 75.
 'Shall': 54, *z*; 57.
 'Should': 54, *z*; 57; 76; 77.
 si: 47–50; 52; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.
 'So': 85, *a*.
 'Some': 89.
 Spelling: 1–8.
 Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.
 Suffixes: Ad. N., 3; 35–37; 85.
 Syllables: 8.

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100



Tenses:

Compound: 54; 56; 73; 75.
 Future: see Future; imperfect: see Past Descriptive; past absolute: see Past Absolute; past descriptive: see Past Descriptive; present: see Present; preterit: see Past Absolute.

'Than': 33.

'There': 84.

Time of day: 38, c.

'To': 79, a, b.

u (letter): 2; 2, a; 4; Ad. N., 2.

Verbs: 53-77; 92; 93.

Auxiliary verbs: see Auxiliary; conjugation: see Conjugation;

tion; lists of irregular verbs: 92; 93; alphabetical: 93; by conjugations: 92; moods: see Moods; tenses: see Tenses; regular verbs: 55-56; 59-63; irregular verbs: 64-68; 92; regular parts: 66; compound verbs: 67, a; 93, a; old forms: 63, d; 68; 92.

vi (adv.): 47, a; 84.

Vowels: 2-3; Ad. N., 2-3.

'Whatever': 44, c.

'Whoever': 44, c.

'Will': 54, 2; 57.

'Would': 54, 2; 54, e; 57; 76; 77.

'You': 52; 86.





This book should be returned to
the Library on or before the last date
stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred
by retaining it beyond the specified
time.

Please return promptly.

DUE MAY 22 '33

DUE JUN 5 '33

DUE JUL 13 '33

DUE JAN 25 '39

